

Massachusetts and Maine Families

in the Ancestry of Walter Goodwin Davis (1885–1966):
A Reprinting, in Alphabetical Order by Surname,
of the Sixteen Multi-Ancestor Compendia

(plus *Thomas Haley of Winter Harbor and His Descendants*)
compiled by Maine's Foremost Genealogist, 1916–1963

Walter Goodwin Davis

with an Introduction by Gary Boyd Roberts

Director of Special Research Projects
New England Historic Genealogical Society

Volume III
Neal – Wright



Copyright © 1996
Genealogical Publishing Co., Inc.
Baltimore, Maryland
All Rights Reserved
Library of Congress Catalogue Card Number 95-81293
International Standard Book Number for Volume III: 0-8063-1495-8
ISBN set number: 0-8063-1496-6
Made in the United States of America

Contents

Neal, of Litchfield (from <i>Joseph Neal</i> , 1945)	1
Neale, of Salem (from <i>Sarah Stone</i> , 1930)	21
Newcomb, of Braintree (from <i>Annis Spear</i> , 1945)	38
Norman, of Salem and Marblehead (from <i>Sarah Stone</i> , 1930) ...	44
Noyes, of Newbury (from <i>Abel Lunt</i> , 1963)	54
Nurse, of Salem (from <i>Sarah Johnson</i> , 1960)	62
Parish, of Groton (from <i>Sarah Hildreth</i> , 1958)	79
Matthew Patten, of Biddeford (from <i>James Patten</i> , 1941)	84
Hector Patten, of Saco (from <i>James Patten</i> , 1941)	97
William Patten, of Boston (from <i>James Patten</i> , 1941)	126
Robert Patten, of Arundel (from <i>James Patten</i> , 1941)	129
William Patten, of Wells (from <i>James Patten</i> , 1941)	156
Pearce, of York (from <i>Sarah Stone</i> , 1930)	163
Perkins, of Topsfield (from <i>Dudley Wildes</i> , 1959)	165
Pettingill, of Newbury (from <i>Abel Lunt</i> , 1963)	183
Porter, of Salem Village (from <i>Dudley Wildes</i> , 1959)	193
Rayment, of Beverly (from <i>Bethia Harris</i> , 1934)	203
Reade, of Wickford, Co. Essex, England (from <i>Bethia Harris</i> , 1934)	208
Richardson, of Chelmsford (from <i>Sarah Hildreth</i> , 1958)	216
Roberts, of Oyster River, New Hampshire (from <i>Lydia Harmon</i> , 1924)	229
Rogers, of Marshfield (from <i>Joseph Neal</i> , 1945)	234
Roper, of Hampton and Ipswich (from <i>Phoebe Tilton</i> , 1947) ...	239
Safford, of Ipswich and Newbury (from <i>Phoebe Tilton</i> , 1947) ...	242
Sandell, of Basildon, Co. Essex, England (from <i>Bethia Harris</i> , 1934)	260
Scott, of Ipswich (from <i>Phoebe Tilton</i> , 1947)	267
Scroggs, of London, England, and Salem (from <i>Bethia Harris</i> , 1934)	271
Searle, of Ipswich and Rowley (from <i>Bethia Harris</i> , 1934)	278
Shatswell, of Ipswich (from <i>Annis Spear</i> , 1945)	282
Sherburne, of Portsmouth (from <i>Joseph Waterhouse</i> , 1949)	289
Silver, of Newbury (from <i>Phoebe Tilton</i> , 1947)	301

Mary Sloper's Family Record (from <i>Joseph Waterhouse</i> , 1949)	..305
Smith [George], of Salem (from <i>Sarah Johnson</i> , 1960)	.....315
Smith [Robert], of Boxford (from <i>Amos Towne</i> , 1927)	.....323
Spear, of Braintree (from <i>Annis Spear</i> , 1945)	.....341
St. Barbe, of Salisbury, England (from <i>Abel Lunt</i> , 1963)	.....368
Stone, of Beverly and Arundel (from <i>Sarah Stone</i> , 1930)	.....377
Symonds, of Salem (from <i>Dudley Wildes</i> , 1959)	.....399
Taprill, of Great Island, New Hampshire (from <i>Lydia Harmon</i> , 1924)	.....402
Thompson and Ward, of Great Yarmouth (from <i>Sarah Johnson</i> , 1960)	.....405
Tilden, of Scituate (from <i>Joseph Neal</i> , 1945)	.....409
Tilton, of Lynn and Ipswich (from <i>Phoebe Tilton</i> , 1947)	.....438
Tower, of Hingham (from <i>Annis Spear</i> , 1945)	.....480
Towne, of Topsfield and Arundel (from <i>Amos Towne</i> , 1927)	....484
Towne, of Topsfield (from <i>Dudley Wildes</i> , 1959)	.....499
Towne, of Topsfield (from <i>Sarah Johnson</i> , 1960)	.....504
Twisden, of Scituate and York (from <i>Joseph Neal</i> , 1945)	.....508
Underwood, of Chelmsford (from <i>Sarah Hildreth</i> , 1958)	.....512
Vinson, of Gloucester (from <i>Charity Haley</i> , 1916)	.....515
Vinson, of Gloucester (from <i>Nicholas Davis</i> , 1956)	.....517
Walton, of Great Island, New Hampshire (from <i>Lydia Harmon</i> , 1924)	.....523
<i>Lithobia</i> (from <i>Lydia Harmon</i> , 1924)	.....533
Wardwell, of Wells (from <i>Annis Spear</i> , 1945)	.....548
Waterhouse, of Portsmouth, Scarborough and Standish (from <i>Joseph Waterhouse</i> , 1949)	.....553
Watts, of Cockfield, Co. Durham, and Scarborough (from <i>Sarah Miller</i> , 1939)	.....588
Weare alias Brown, of Wiltshire, England (from <i>Abel Lunt</i> , 1963)	.....596
West, of Biddeford, from <i>Charity Haley</i> , 1916)	.....601
Wheeler, of Newbury (from <i>Annis Spear</i> , 1945)	.....604
White, of Scituate (from <i>Joseph Neal</i> , 1945)	.....607
Wildes, of Topsfield (from <i>Dudley Wildes</i> , 1959)	.....613
Wood, of Ipswich (from <i>Dudley Wildes</i> , 1959)	.....649
Wormwood, of York (from <i>Annis Spear</i> , 1945)	.....651
Wright, of Saugus and Braintree (from <i>Joseph Neal</i> , 1945)	.....656

NEALE

1. JOHN NEALE was admitted a freeman in Salem on May 18, 1642. He had married Mary Lawes, only child of Francis Lawes of Salem, about one year previously, as they had a child baptized in Salem in the same month as his acquirement of full citizenship, but no record of the marriage or of the date of his arrival in New England remains.*

John Neale

John Neale

Mary Neale joined the First Church of Salem in 1647. John Neale was on the Grand Jury in 1648, 1649, 1660-1663 and 1667, on the Trial Jury in 1650, 1654, 1656, 1665 and 1669, and on 20: 6: 1651 he took the oath of office as constable of Salem. He seems to have been a staunch Puritan as he was a constant witness against his Quaker neighbors in their absences from meeting. He also appears in the town records in 1644, 1645 and 1660 as supplying wood for Rev. Mr. Norris and "or Teacher." He held minor town offices, such as surveyor of fences and highways up to the time of his death.

After the death of his father-in-law in 1665 or 1666 Neale and his wife lived in the Lawes homestead,† and it seems probable that they had been with Mr. and Mrs. Lawes previous to that date as no property records indicate his having a separate farm or dwelling. He was joint executor with his wife of the Lawes estate, and in this capacity he sold a thirty acre grant from the

* On 25: 11: 1641 (Jan. 25, 1642) John Neal of Marblehead, servant to Mr. William Cokraine was sentenced to be whipped for burglary (Records & Files, etc., I: 35). John Neale of Salem, the head of the family with which we are dealing, was admitted a freeman on May 18, 1642, and had probably married the daughter of the prosperous and respectable Francis Lawes in June or July of 1641. It is submitted that, inasmuch as a freeman had to be a church member in good standing, which conviction for burglary would preclude, Mr. Cokraine's servant and Mary Lawes's husband were not the same man. It is also improbable that a man convicted of a felony in 1642 would be himself seated on the Grand Jury six years later (1648).

Records and Files, etc., I: 160; IV: 315; the second signature, particularly in the capital N, bears marked resemblance to the handwriting of Francis Neale.

† Essex Deeds, 14: 59.

town to Nathaniel Putnam in 1670.* He was designated as a yeoman.†

* Essex Deeds, 6 : 40.

† There is evidence that John Neale of Salem was a kinsman in some degree of Mr. Francis Neale of Maine, who fled to Salem with his family in 1675, when Maine was devastated by Indian warfare. Francis Neale was doubtless a member of the minor English gentry, while John Neale seems to have been of yeoman rank, but it is possible for this difference to exist between cousins in the same family.

Mr. Francis Neale, who was born about 1626 (Essex Deeds, 17 : 171), was probably son of Francis Neal of London, gentleman, who married Elizabeth Jocelyn, daughter of Sir Thomas Jocelyn, on May 25, 1625, and was therefore a nephew of Mr. Henry Jocelyn of Black Point, with whom he was associated in Maine. Neale married Jane Andrews, step-daughter of Arthur Macworth of Casco Bay, and took a prominent part in the affairs of the province until 1675 when he was driven to Massachusetts by the Indian uprising.

In Salem, where he was admitted an inhabitant 11 : 1 : 1675, Mr. Neale seems to have been financially unfortunate. He was a conveyancer, and in 1686 John Higginson urged his appointment as registrar of vital records, vouching for him as a "gentleman, born and bred." Perhaps a lack of sympathy with Puritanism prevented him from taking the part in the Massachusetts government for which he was fitted by education and experience.

Francis Neale

Mr. Neale died in Salem between Aug. 1, 1695, and Jan. 2, 1696/7, the former date being that of his will and the latter that of the appointment of his son Samuel as the administrator of his estate. The will left to Samuel £5, and a like sum to the testator's granddaughter, Sarah Neale; to Mrs. Blance and Mrs. Felt, his wife's sisters, and to each of their children over sixteen years of age, a pair of gloves apiece; to Mr. John Blance, Sr. "a pr. of Tobacco tongues"; to Thomas Elkins formerly my servant, 10 s.; to Thomas Cloutman a sermon book of Dr. Martin Luther's; the residue to the executor, Capt. Bartholomew Gedney "because he hath been as a father to me & a faithfull friend in a Strange place when I was driven Out of all by ye enemy." Capt. Gedney renounced the executorship, the son was appointed administrator, and the estate declared insolvent. (Essex Probate No. 19170: 305 : 214, 285, 294, 299.)

Children: —

- i. FRANCIS; d. about 1691, leaving a widow Sarah, and an only daughter, Sarah. (Essex Probate, No. 19175). His wife was probably Sarah Pickworth, daughter of Samuel and Sarah (Marston) Pickworth of Salem. As Sarah Neale, she was appointed administratrix of the estate of her brother, Samuel Pickworth (Essex Deeds, 10 : 147).

Children: —

1. Sarah, b. Nov. 4, 1688.
2. ———, bap. Sept. 28, 1689.
3. Jean, b. Jan. 1, 1690/1.

- ii. SAMUEL: "only surviving son" in 1696/7; in 1702 his wife Abigail was stated to be a daughter of Francis Collins, deceased; she probably m. Henry Elkins Dec. 6, 1714.

Child: —

1. John, b. Nov. 1, 1689 (incorrectly entered as "Samuel Neale, son of John Neale, his son John"); he probably m. Elizabeth ———, had children John and Samuel baptized in 1712 and 1716, and was "late of Marblehead" in 1746, when his children and heirs, John Neal, fisherman, Mary Pierce, widow, Rebecca Neal, widow (of Samuel?) and Margaret Broughton, sold his land. (Essex Deeds, 89 : 204.)

- iii. JOHN; d. s. p. in 1691; his brother Samuel was appointed administrator; the inventory was taken by Jeremiah Neale and Samuel Pike April 6, 1691, and amounted to £17 : 18; he was indebted to the estate of John Neale, deceased, for the sum of £32; the administrator's sureties were Richard Pritchard and Joseph Neale. (Essex Probate, 303 : 40.)

It is certainly more than coincidence or disinterested business (1) that Francis² Neale witnessed a deed of Jonathan³ (John⁴) Neale in 1680; (2) that Francis² Neale witnessed an agreement between Jeremiah³, Joseph³ and Lydia³ (Neale) Hart, children of John³ Neale in 1687; (3) that the estate of John⁴ Neale loaned £32, a large sum for the times, to John² (Francis⁴) Neale; (4) that Joseph³ (John³) Neale was surety for Samuel³ (Francis³) Neale, and that Jeremiah³ (John³) Neale took the inventory of John² (Francis²) Neale in 1691.

John Neale "the elder" died on May 12, 1672. His will follows:

"I John Neale of Salem, Senior, being sick & weake but of pfect memory Blessed be the Lord, doe make this my last will & testament, this 3^d of may 1672. Imp^r whereas it is to be understood, as by the last will & testament of my father in law, frances lawes deceased the house outhouses & land adjoyning &c as is exprest in the said will will be to the use of my beloued wife while shee liues & further I doe giue & bequeath unto mary my beloued wife that pcell of land caled Tuckes lott containing about fower acres inclosed & lying in the Towne, for the time of her life, excepting ou quarter of an acre of it, which s^d quarter of an acre to the northward corner next the highwaye I giue & bequeath to my Daughter Lidea Hart & to her heires lawfully begotten of her owne body, for euer.

"It: I giue vnto my said wife, one dozen of napkins & a board cloath & 6 pillow beers, which shee shall make choyce of. It: besides the bed & furniture giuen her by her s^d father, I giue & bequeath to her, one third p^t of all my cattell and moueable goods & estat undisposed of heare after in this my will, that is to be understood when my debts are paid which my will is should be paid out of that p^t of my estat to say my catell & moueable goods.

"It: I giue vnto my son, Jeremiah neale, that dwelling house & all the ground adjoining, (to say that house he now liueth in) except one acre of the land which I giue & bequeath to John my son Jeremiahs son, to be possest of it when he come of age, & alsoe excepting that end of the house from the chimney to the westward, & the use of halfe the oarchard & of about one quarter of an acre of y^e ground for a garden & yeard room & which my will is that my son John neale shall haue the free use of he keeping of it in repaire untill such time as my son John shall come to enjoy after his mothers decease y^e aforesaid pcell of land caled Tuck lott & then the whole to be my son Jeremiah and alsoe, it is to be understood, that my son Jeremiah neale is to pay out of the said house & land, aforesaid, to my two grandchildren, Mary & Sara neale, his two children, ten pounds each of them paiable at age or married, Alsoe I giue to my son Jeremiah that peece of salt marsh I bought of the widdow moore & alsoe a peece of fresh meddow, by goodells lott soe caled. It: I giue vnto my wife the time of her life halfe that lott of ten Acres by Bracketts, for her use together with the other halfe, left her by her father & after her decease, I giue it to my son Jeremiah to Injoy it wholly to himselfe & his heares foreuer.

“It: I giue to my son John neale, that pcell of land caled tucks lott after his mothers decease, as is intimated before, excepting ye quarter of an acre giuen to his sister Lidea: alsoe I giue & bequeath to my son John neale, that ten acre lott caled Herberts Lott, and my will is that my son John shall pay or cause to be paid, to my daughter Lideas child Lidea, when she coms of age or married ten pounds out of ye s^d Tuckes & Herberts Lott, & in case ye s^d Lidea my grand child doe not suruiue till ye time then to pay it to ye next of age of ye suruining children of my daughter Lidea It: I giue to my son Jonathan the one halfe of the twenty Acres caled Loofes lott, be it more or less: It: I giue & bequeath to my son Jeremiah, my son Joseph & my daughter Lidea that fifteene acres land, caled watsons & Hales lott, to be equally devided between them, only it is to be vnderstood that my will is that the third p^t to my daughter Lidea, is to be to her & (her) heirs lawfully begotten of her owne body for euer It: I giue to my son Joseph, that Acre of salt marsh adjoining to the land of John Rowden.

“It: I giue to my Daughter Liddea: & to her heirs lawfully begotten of her owne body, the other halfe of Loofes lott soe caled, provided her mother, doe see cause & she cary it to her mother in a dutiful & penitenciall maner It: I giue vnto my son Jeremiah neale & his son Jon: to my son John, Jonathan, Joseph & daughter Lidea, that swamp caled Adameses swamp, to be equally devided betweene them & my will is that my Daughter Lideas p^t is to be to her & to her heires lawfully begotten of her owne body It: after all my debts are paide my will is & I giue & bequeath the other two thirds of my cattle & moueable goods & estate to be equally devided betweene my fiue children to say Jeremiah, John, Jonathan, Joseph & Lidea.

“I doe desire my Loucing freinds, major w^m. Hathorne, Capt walter price & Hilliard Veren sen^r to be my ouer seers of this my will to whome I refer the deuisson of that p^t of my land to be devided or goods, amongst my children, soe that it may be equall & for their peace. Lastly I doe appoynt my beloued wife, & my son Jeremiah to be my executors of this my last will and testament.”

John (his O mark) Neale.

Witness: Wm. Hathorne, sr., Walter Price, Hilliard Veren, sr.

Proved in Ipswich court 28: 4: 1672 by Maj. William Hathorne, Capt. Walter Price and Hilliard Veren.

Inventory taken 5: 4: 1672, by Hilliard Veren and John Pickering: Four acres of land inclosed called Tuckes lot, 90li.; a

dwelling house in which Jeremiah Neale lives with the ground adjoyning, about 5 acres, 150li.; 3-4 of an acre of saltmarsh bought of widdow more, 7li. 10s.; about 3-4 of an acre of fresh meddow by Goodells lott, soe called, 7li.; 5 acres of land by Good: Brackett's, 10li.; 10 acres called Herbert's lott, 25li.; 20 acres more or less called Loofes lott, 40li.; 15 acres called watsons & Hales lott, 35li.; an Acre more or less of salt marsh by John Rowden's, 10li.; about 8 acres of upland & swamp called Adamases swamp, 30li.; 5 cowes, 15li.; 6 oxen & 3 steers, 39li.; 3 yearlings, 2 calves, 5li.; 1 horse & 2 mares, 3li. yf alive, 8li.; 18 ewes, & weathers & rams, 11li. 4s.; 4 swin with sucking piggs, 2li. 4s.; about 5 acres of pease upon ye ground & other graine, worth little by reason of the drought, 2li.; two or three old tumbrells, slead, chaines, yoakes, plowes, wheele barrow & other plow tackle, 5li.; two guns, the lockes defective, 3 blades of swords, powder & bulletts, 1li. 10s.; salt meat, 20s.; bacon, 30s.; 3 hives of bees, som decayed, 10s.; 50 Bushells Indian corne at 30d. p., 6li. 5s.; 4 Bushells pease, 13s. 4d.; 9 Bushels mault, 1li. 16s.; dung forcks, pitchforkes, howes, axes, shovells & other tooles & old seithes, reap hooches & other lumber, 1li. 10s.; tubbs, barrells, pailles & other lumber, 10s.; pewter, 3li. 6s.; brass kettles & 2 candle stickes, pestle & mortar, 3li. 4s.; 3 old Iron potts & drippin pan, 1li.; 3 bras scilletts, chafindish, brass pott, warming pan, 1li.; tin ware, old earthware, trayes & dishes, 10s.; fetters & old horse tackle, grinston, 12s.; 3 old spinning wheelles, 7s. 6d.; a hauck, Andirons, tongues, fire shovell, bellowes & spitts, 10s.; old booke & bibles, 1li.; 6 pillow beers, a broad-cloath & 1 doz. naptkins, 1li. 5s.; 8 pr. of sheets, 4li. 16s.; 3 shurts, 15s.; 6 pillow-beers, 2 board cloathes, 6 naptkins & towells, 1li. 6s.; his wearing apparell, with a hatt, 5li.; 4 pr. stockens, 3 pr. shooes, old. 1li.; about 20li. Cotton wooll, 16s.; sheepe wooll, 30li., 1li. 10s.; about 20li. of Hunney, 14s.; 2 old wenscot & 2 smale old board chests & a box & settle, 1li. 10s.; 3 or 4 basketts, hrush, looking glass & som small old things, 6s.; 3 yards carsey at 5s. p., 15s.; 12 yrds. hoame mad cloath, 1li. 16s.; about 20 yrds cloath at the weavers, 2li. 10s.; about 40 yrds. at the weavers, 3li.; 10li. linen yarne, 1li.; a greene rugg, 18s.; reg rug, 14s.; old red rugg, 8s.; 3 pr. of old blanketts, 1li. 10s.; 12 chaires, 2 stooles, 2 tables, 1li. 6s.; the feather beds, bolsters, sheets, blanketts, covering & appurtenances, 3li. 10s.; a flock bed, bolster, sheets, blanketts, covering & appurtenances, 2li. 10s.; a truckle bedstead, 2li.; curtaines & vallens, 1li.; cot-ten yarne, 4s.; 1 pr. pillowbeers, 4s.; scales & waites, 5s.; a pcell of cheese, 1li.; cash, 3li.; a bedsted, rope & matt, 1li. 5s.; 18

cord of wood in ye woods, 9s.; a canoe, 12s.; 400 of board, 16s.; owing to the estate, 25li. 12s. 3d.; total, 593li. 14s. 7d. Estate debtor, 121li. 14s. 1d. Added to the inventory, barn apprized by Mr. Bartholmew Gedney & John Pickering, 23li.

Attested in Salem court 28: 4: 1672, by Mary, the relict.

Mary (Lawes) Neale married as her second husband Andrew Mansfield of Lynn, on June 4, 1673. He was a prominent citizen of the town and was its representative to the General Court from 1680 to 1683. Mrs. Mansfield died June 27, 1681. Mansfield survived her until 1692, when he died at the age of ninety-four. Jeremiah Neale was administrator of his mother's estate, the court directing that, as eldest son, he should have a double share, the remaining shares being divided among Jonathan Neale, Joseph Neale, widow Anne Neale (for her children) and the children of Lydia (Neale) Hart.*

Mary Mansfield

Inventory of the estate of Mary Mansfield, executrix of her former husband, John Neale, of what goods was left at her decease, that she was possessed of, taken 7: 7m: 1681, by Hiliard Veren and Benjamin Gerrish: 2 chests, 11s.; 1 bedstead, 10s.; 3 boxes, 3s.; 2 stooles, 2s. 6d.; 9 chaires, 12s.; warming pan, 8s.; 3 skilletts, 6s.; 1 chafendish, 2s. 6d.; 1 three pint pott, 2s.; 1 brass candlestick, 7s.; gridiron, 2s. 6d.; 1 pr. tongs, 12d.; 1 bread grater 18d., 1 old frying pan, 2s. 6d.; 1 pr. doggs, 2s.; pr. cobirons, 2s. 6d.; 1 Kittle, 30s.; 1 small Kittle, 5s.; 1 pr. holl. pillobyes, 3s.; 1 pr. Lacet pillobyes, 3s.; 2 single pillobyes, 2s. 6d.; pr. cotton pillobyes, 2s. 6d.; 2 pr. cotton sheets, 25s.; 1 holl. sheet, 5s.; 2 silver spoones, 17s.; 5 occume, 12d.; cashe, 4li. 8s. 6d.; 1 purse, 6d.; gold ring, 12s.; bed, 2 bolsters, 3li. 4s.; two pillows, 6s.; 1 pr. bianketts muche worne, 7s.; rugge, 10s.; covered, 3s.; 5 curtaines old, 6s. 6d.; 1 old hatchell, 2s. 6d., 1 course table cloth, 7s. 6d.; 5 small towells, 2s. 6d., 2 old table cloths, 4s. 6d.; 1 doz. napkins, 15s.; 1 bell, 2s. 6d.; 5 shifts, 1li. 2s.; 1 old bible, 2s.; 1 old wescott, 2s.; box with irons, 18d.; 2 old aprons, 3s.; 19 dressings, 9s.; 5 woomens neckcloths, 5s.; 3 cappes, 2s. 6d.; 6 quoives, 2s.; 19 bands, 2s., old Linning with a mans cap, 3s.; 2 pr. worne Leather gloves, 18d.; 4 pr. cotten, 2s.; 1 silk hoode, 2s. 6d.; 1 old silk hood & hankerchef, 3s. 6d.; 1 silk handkercheife, 2s. 6d., 1 paragon handerchief & cape, 4s. 6d.; 2 speckled handkercheifs, 12d.; 2 quoives & 2 handkercheifs

* Records and Files, etc., VIII: 181.

well worne, 18d. ; 3 pr. old stockings & 1 pr. old shoes, 4s. ; 1 hatt, 6s. ; old fashond well worne hatt, 2d. ; 2 old ones, 12d. ; 1 old pr. bodices, 15d. ; 1 sad colored gound, 13s. 3d. ; 1 penistoon coate, 5s. ; 1 cotton coate, 4s. 6d. ; 1 old gound, 6s. ; 1 old coat, 4s. ; 1 old cloke, 3s. 1 riding hood, 2s. 6d. ; 1 safeguard, 4s. ; 1 little bl. seag cloak, 12d. ; 1 old riding hood, 12d., 3 old homespun peticoats, 8s. ; 2 old cloth wescoates, 4s., 1 searge wescoat worne, 6s. ; 4 green saye aprons, 8s. ; 1 pr. britches, 6s. ; 1 pr. bl. britches & coat with itt, 11s. ; 1 remnant Kersy, 3s. ; 2 old wescoats, 2s. ; pinsers, brand & some other old things, 1s. 6d. ; pestle & mortar, 12s., bras pott & pott hooks, 1li. ; 1 trivett, 2s., bras Ladle & chaney porringer, 3s. ; earthen pott, 6d., & some other trifles, 1s. 3d. ; 3 trayes, 2 or 3 wooden dishes, 5s. ; brush, nedle box with some nedles, 1s. ; silver bows for spectacles, 18d., peper box, 2s. ; 1 old carpett, 12d., 2 Linsy woolsy aprons, 2s. 6d. ; grindstone & crank, 5s. ; 1 old table, 4s. ; spit, 3s. ; 1 muffe, 12d. ; parcell of pewter, much of itt old, 1li. 14s. ; 3 haifers, 35s. pr. head & earlin cafe, 15s. 6li. ; 1 cafe, 10s. ; 1 chaine, 12d. ; due for rent from Jeremiah Neale, 15s. ; John Fisk, Jr. is Dr., 10s. ; total 39li. 18s.

The estate is Dr. to Joseph Neale the remainder of a legasy given by his grandfather Lawes, 3li. 10s. ; Jere. Neale due to him for rent, 1li. ; Joseph Neale the remainder of a legacy given by his father, 1li. 19s. 10 1-2d. ; Sergt. Mansfield, 10s. ; charges about the estate & pd. ye cleark & my time & other expences, 2li. ; total, 8li. 19s. 10 1-2d.

Attested in Ipswich court Sept. 27, 1681, by Jerymiah Neale, administrator.*

Children, born in Salem:—

- i. JOHN, bapt. 22: 3: 1642; d. in infancy.
- ii. JOHN, bapt. 24: 1: 1644; d. in infancy.
2. iii. JEREMIAH, bapt. 18: 11: 1645.
- iv. SARA; d. 22: 5: 1658.
3. v. JOHN, bapt. 24: 11: 1647.
- vi. LYDIA, bapt. 7: 2: 1650; m. Jonathan Hart, son of John and Florence (Norman) Hart, 9 mo. 1671. (*See Hart.*)
- vii. JONATHAN, b. 15: 6: 1652; d. in infancy.
- viii. MARY, b. 14: 1: 1655; d. 6: 5: 1658.
4. ix. JONATHAN, b. 6: 7: 1657.
5. x. JOSEPH, b. 14: 1: 1659.

2. LIEUT. JEREMIAH² NEALE (*John*¹) was baptized in Salem 18: 11: 1645. He married Sarah Hart, daughter of John and Florence (Norman) Hart, June 15, 1658. He was a carpenter by trade.

He inherited from his grandfather Lawes one-half of a ten

* Essex Probate, No. 19173.

acre lot "by Bracketts," and from his father he obtained the other half. His father also left him a dwelling-house and about four acres of land which Jeremiah was occupying at the date of the will, an acre of salt marsh bought of Widow Moore, and about three-quarters of an acre of fresh meadow "by Goodell's lot." He served as executor of his father's will in 1672. In 1679 he bought of George Corwin further land at Goodell's Spring.*

Sara (Hart) Neale died 28: 7: 1672, and Jeremiah Neale married Mary Buffum, daughter of Robert and Tamsin Buffum of Salem, 22: 7: 1673. The Buffums were Quakers, and as Jeremiah Neale objected to taking an oath as tythingman in 1680, he may have had a certain sympathy, at least, with the persecuted sect.

Jeremiah Neale

In King Philip's War Jeremiah Neale was under Capt. Joseph Gardner with the successive ranks of sergeant, ensign and lieutenant, his name appearing on four rolls dated from December 19, 1675, to August, 1676.

Lieut. Neale was a member of the Jury of Trials 28: 9: 1676, and 27: 9: 1677, surveyor of fences in the north field in 1677/8, foreman of the Grand Jury 26: 9: 1678, member of the Grand Jury June 24, 1679, tythingman 1680, and on March 5, 1684/5 John Green, Marshal General of Massachusetts Bay, appointed him Marshal of the County.**

Jeremiah Neale sold land to Francis Nichols in 1673, his first wife's half-brother, Thomas Whittridge, witnessing the deed.† He sold land to William Brown, Jr., adjoining that lately bought of his sister-in-law Anne Neale, in 1682;†† he made a boundary agreement with Jonathan Pickering in 1682;‡ his age is stated in depositions to have been about forty in 1689, about forty-seven in 1692, about forty-nine in 1694;§ he sold land to Stephen Small in 1692.¶

He was administrator of the estate of his mother, Mary (Lawes) (Neale) Mansfield in 1681, and, as eldest son, received a double portion of her property.|| He had previously served as her attorney in law-suits and real estate transactions, as he had

* Essex Deeds, 5: 60.

** Supreme Judicial Court of Mass., No. 2285.

† Essex Deeds, 5: 82.

†† Essex Deeds, 6: 51.

‡ Essex Deeds, 6: 45.

§ Essex Deeds, 8: 174; 10: 93, 113.

¶ Essex Deeds, 10: 169.

|| Records and Files, etc., VIII: 146, 181.

for his brother-in-law, Jonathan Hart, and for his own brother Joseph. He was administrator of the estate of Nathaniel Pickman in 1687/8.*

In the witchcraft trials Lieut. Neale appeared as a witness against Ann Pudeator, testifying that she visited his house to borrow a mortar while his wife, whom she had often threatened, was sick with smallpox, and that the nurse laid his wife's subsequent death to this cause. Nearly twenty years earlier Mary Neale had testified to seeing Jacob Pudeator strike and kick his wife in the highway before Lieut. Neale's house, which may have been the beginning of a lasting bitterness between the two women.**

It is apparent that Mary (Buffum) Neale died before 1692. From a deed† given by Ruth Hibbard, widow, in 1726, in which she refers to her mother Ruth Neale, late wife of Jeremiah Neale of Salem, and to her grandfather and great-grandfather John and Richard Ingersoll, it appears that Lieut. Neale's third wife was Ruth (Ingersoll) Rose, widow of Richard Rose, who died before Nov. 27, 1684, the date of the inventory of his estate. She was born June 10, 1649.

His fourth wife was Dorothy (Beadle) Lord, widow of William Lord, whom he married October 31, 1707. She represented her late husband Lord at the proprietors' meeting in 1714.

Lieut. Neale died before July 19, 1722, when his son Jeremiah was appointed administrator of his estate, which was small, the inventory showing only £210:6:6. The account shows that twenty-four shillings were spent for wine and forty-three shillings for gloves at his funeral. The estate was divided in 1735 between the widow Dorothy Neale, the eldest son John, son Jeremiah, the heirs of his son Robert, and daughters Mary, Sarah, Abigail, Deborah and Hannah.‡

Children, by first wife: —

- i. JOHN, b. April 16, 1669. He gave his father a receipt for one acre of land left him by his grandfather Neale on Nov. 13, 1693.§ John Neale, carpenter, sold to his brother Jeremiah a dwelling-house, barn and land in Salem on Nov. 18, 1702.¶ He was living in Pennsylvania in 1733.||
- ii. MARY, b. 11:3:1670; living in 1735.
- iii. SARAH, b. 1:9:1671; m. Benjamin² Archer, son of John and Bethia (Weeks) Archer of Salem July 19, 1693. Archer d. before 1705, and she m. Gilbert Tapley of Beverly Aug. 21, 1707. He d. in

* Essex Deeds, 8 : 134.

** Records and Files, etc., V : 377.

† Essex Deeds, 63 : 202.

‡ Essex Probate, 313 : 474, 534, 663; 320 : 241.

§ Essex Deeds, 14 : 246.

¶ Essex Deeds, 15 : 10.

|| The Neale Record, by Theodore A. Neale, p. 17.

1710. Her third husband was ——— Wilkins. In 1728, as Sarah Wilkins of Boston, widow, she gave a power of attorney to her son John Archer to dispose of her interest in her father's estate.

Children: —

1. *John Archer.*
2. *Benjamin Archer.*
3. *Sarah Archer.*
4. *Joseph Archer.*

By second wife: —

- iv. JEREMIAH, b. 25: 7: 1674; m. Elizabeth Small, daughter of Samuel and Hannah (Sibley) Small of Salem, March 29, 1706. She was b. March 4, 1678/9. He was a housewright. He and his brothers and sisters (Hannah Neale, widow and administratrix of Robert Neale, William Curtis and wife Lydia, Charles Hooper and wife Hannah, Abigail Neale, spinster, all of Salem, James Hewes and wife Deborah and Mercy Neale, spinster, all of Boston) disposed of their Buffum inheritance in 1720 and 1723.*

Children: —

1. *Jeremiah*, bapt. June 4, 1710.
 2. *Lydia*, bapt. June 4, 1710.
 3. *John*, bapt. June 10, 1711.
 4. *Hannah*, bapt. May 25, 1712.
 5. *Jonathan*, bapt. June 6, 1714; m. Elizabeth West May 25, 1738.
- v. ADICAIL; spinster, of Salem, in 1723/4; living in 1735.
- vi. LYDIA; m. William Curtis about 1697; living in 1723/4.†

Children, born in Salem: —

1. *Daniel Curtis* (triplet), b. Feb. 4, 1698/9.
 2. *James Curtis* (triplet), b. Feb. 4, 1698/9.
 3. *Jonathan Curtis* (triplet), b. Feb. 4, 1698/9.
 4. *Locker Curtis*, b. May 3, 1701.
 5. *Lydia Curtis*, b. July 24, 1702.
 6. *Daniel Curtis*, b. April (after 1701).
- vii. ROBERT; m. Hannah Elsey Nov. 6, 1702; d. before 1723. In 1732 his son Robert was placed under the guardianship of his brother Jeremiah.‡ His estate was not settled until 1745, when his son Benjamin, cordwainer, was appointed administrator.§

Children: —

1. *Mary*, bapt. June 24, 1716; "lame" in 1745.
2. *Hannah*, bapt. Feb. 10, 1716/7; m. Samuel Robinson of Boston Dec. 29, 1737.
3. *Robert*, b. Aug. 11, 1716; m. Catherine Daland Feb. 5, 1738/9; she receipted for his share of his grandfather Neale's estate in 1741;¶ he d. before 1744, when, on Sept. 20, she m. David Boyce, Jr.
4. *Benjamin*, b. April 21, 1721; m. Lydia Begoe Oct. 4,

* Essex Deeds, 37 : 10; 72 : 153.

† Essex Deeds, 72 : 153.

‡ Essex Probate, 317 : 89.

§ Essex Probate, 323 : 160; 326 : 521.

¶ Essex Deeds, 85 : 45.

1742; d. before Aug. 20, 1752, when his widow m. Samuel Luscoub; children — Robert Neale and Lydia Neale, who m. Gedney King July 13, 1766.

- viii. DEBORAH; m. James Hewes in Boston Oct. 5, 1721; d. July 30, 1733, in Boston; no children recorded in Boston.
 ix. HANNAH; m. Charles Hooper, son of Benjamin and Eleanor Hooper of Salem, Nov. 27, 1718; he was b. in Salem July 12, 1689.

Children, bapt. in Salem:—

1. *Hannah Hooper*, bapt. Sept. 18, 1720.
2. *Mary Hooper*, bapt. June 28, 1724.
3. *Benjamin Hooper*, bapt. Dec. 26, 1725.
4. *Robert Hooper*, bapt. March 30, 1729.

- x. MERCY; a spinster, living in Boston, in 1723/4.

3. JOHN² NEALE (*John³*) was baptized in Salem 24: 11: 1657. He was selected by his grandfather Lawes to carry on his trade as a weaver and to him were bequeathed all of the old emigrant's tackle and tools.

John Neale married Anne Nichols about the year 1672.

By his father's will he received an enclosed four acre parcel of land in the town called Tuck's lot, of the value of £90, after the death of his mother; a ten acre plot called Herbert's lot, worth £25; and one-sixth of Adams' swamp. Until he should receive possession of Tuck's lot, he was to have the use of one-half of the house occupied by his brother Jeremiah, one-half of the orchard and one-quarter of an acre for a garden. John's death, on November 11, 1679, while his mother was still living, prevented the fruition of these plans.

John Neale

His wife, Anne Neal, was appointed administratrix of his estate, her late husband's step-father, Andrew Mansfield, and his brother, Jeremiah Neale, being her bondsmen, on 25: 9: 1679. She brought in an inventory on June 29, 1680, but the court did not accept it, probably owing to some question as to the value of John Neale's prospective remainder interest in his father's estate after the expiration of his mother's life estate. The corrected inventory, made by John Pickering and John Norman, was accepted on 30: 9: 1680. It was in a total sum of £180: 8: 10, of which £70 covered Tuck's field and £20 the legacy from his grandfather Lawes, not payable until four years after the death of his mother. The court ordered that the entire estate remain in the widow's hands, for the support of her-

self and the four children, the youngest of whom was *posthumous*, and that, upon coming-of-age or marriage, John Neale, the eldest son, should be paid £40, and Thomas, Joseph and Rebecca £20 apiece. In the meantime the sloop "John & Mary," of which John Neale had owned an eighth interest, was burned, and upon Anne Neale's petition the ultimate legacies to the children were cut in half by the court in June, 1681.*

On April 24, 1683, Anne (Nichols) Neale married William Sterling of Haverhill as his third wife, having entered into a prenuptial agreement protecting the property rights of their children on the previous 22nd of March.** By this marriage she had one daughter, Anne Sterling, born in Haverhill March 14, 1684. In 1697 or 1698 the Sterling family moved to Lyme, Connecticut, where, on February 13, 1699/700, William Sterling, shipwright, and Anne, his wife, administratrix of the estate of John Neale, conveyed Tuck's lot and the dwelling thereon, which she had built in 1682,† to her son Thomas Neale, who is engaged to pay to his brother Joseph his share of his father's estate, the oldest son John being dead and his sister Rebecca being already satisfied.††

Anne (Nichols) (Neale) Sterling died before 1706 when William Sterling took his fourth wife. He died January 22, 1719, in Lyme.

Children of John and Anne Neale, born in Salem:—

- i. JOHN, b. 15: 2: 1673; m. Martha Skerry, daughter of Ephraim and Martha (Mellard) Skerry. They joined her sisters in disposing of her father's estate in 1694.‡ He d. before 1700.

Child:—

- i. *Abigail*, bapt. April 19, 1702, in the First Church.
- ii. THOMAS, b. 14: 12: 1675; he was apprenticed to Samuel Felton of Salem, weaver on Mar. 1, 1682/3, but did not serve out his time, for which Felton recovered in 1697;‡‡ fisherman, of Salem, in 1701, when he sold Herbert's lot of ten acres, which had belonged to his father and grandfather, to Mr. Philip English.§ He d. before June 28, 1705, when administration on his estate was granted to Joseph Neale of Scituate, Plymouth County, who returned an inventory of £81: 2: 6.§§ Probably *s. p.*
- iii. JOSEPH, b. Dec. 4, 1677; mariner, of Salem, in 1702, when he gave a bill of sale to his brother Thomas;¶ of Scituate in 1705; husbandman and "only surviving son of John and Anne Neale" in 1713.|| He m. Abigail Smith April 24, 1705, in Scituate.

* Probate Records of Essex County, Salem, 1920; Vol. III, pp. 342-4.

** Essex Deeds, 6 : 88.

† Records and Files, etc., VIII : 43.

†† Essex Deeds, 14 : 64.

‡ Essex Deeds, 10 : 166.

‡‡ Supreme Judicial Court of Mass., No. 3580.

§ Essex Deeds, 15 : 64.

§§ Essex Probate, 308 : 375; 309 : 122.

¶ Essex Deeds, 16 : 74.

|| Essex Deeds, 26 : 151, 180.

Children, born in Scituate:—

1. *Joseph*, b. Sept. 19, 1707.
2. *Anne*, bapt. July 19, 1709.
3. *Thomas*, b. Dec. 28, 1711.
4. *John*, bapt. July 6, 1712.
5. *Seth*, b. Feb. 27, 1713.
6. *Lydia*, b. Feb. 24, 1715/16.
7. *Job*, b. June 13, 1718.
8. *Abigail*, b. Feb. 6, 1721.

iv. REBEKAH, b. Feb. 23, 1678/9.

4. JONATHAN² NEALE (*John*¹) was born in Salem 6:7:1657. He inherited the Lawes homestead in the town from his grandfather, after the expiration of his mother's life estate. He sold portions of the land, with his mother's consent, to Benjamin Marston in 1679, to Samuel Wakefield in 1679/80 and to Samuel Shattock, Jr., in 1680.* In each of these deeds he describes himself as a cordwainer. From his father he inherited one half of the twenty-acre lot called Loofe's lot and his proportionate share in Adams' swamp.

In 1683/4 he discharged his brother Lieut. Jeremiah Neale, as executor of his father's and administrator of his mother's estates, from all claims, upon the receipt of a silver spoon,** and in that same year he leased the Lawes property and two lots in the north field, given him by his grandfather and father (Bishop's lot and Loofe's lot) to his brother Joseph for a period of ten years at £9 per year.† In 1685 he made two further transfers from the Lawes estate to Thomas Maule, the leading Quaker of Salem, who built the Quaker meeting-house nearby.‡ In 1691 he sold a small strip of the Lawes property, which was now becoming closely built upon, to Samuel Woodell, glover.§ He made a deposition in 1692, giving his age as thirty-four.¶

Further portions of the Lawes estate were sold in 1707 and 1708,|| and in both of these deeds as in all previous ones he is described as a cordwainer and, there being no release of dower, he was presumably still unmarried.

On July 19, 1725, however, at the age of sixty-seven, he married the widow Mary Marston of Salem. Her maiden name had been Mary Henfield, and she was a daughter of Joseph and Mary (Gardner) Henfield. The record of the baptism of Mary Henfield on November 6, 1687, probably refers to her, her

* Essex Deeds, 5 : 60, 90; 6 : 109.

** Essex Deeds, 7 : 18.

† Essex Deeds, 7 : 11.

‡ Essex Deeds, 7 : 53; 7 : 60.

§ Essex Deeds, 9 : 17.

¶ Essex Deeds, 9 : 83.

|| Essex Deeds, 20 : 79, 150.

parents perhaps being abroad, as the will of Samuel Gardner, her grandfather, made in 1689, contains a clause "if my dear daughter Mary be returned into this country."* Mr. Gardner left to his two Henfield grandchildren, Joseph and Mary, one-quarter part of his corn-mills. Mary Henfield's first husband was Manassah Marston, Jr., whom she married on April 10, 1701. He was born about the year 1679, and died about the year 1720. Mary Henfield was, at the nearest possible estimate, somewhat over forty years of age at the time of her second marriage.

On December 26, 1726, Jonathan Neale, *cordwainer*, with the consent of his wife Mary, sold to William Osborn, Jr., ten acres in the north field called Lawes' lot (Loofe's lot, inherited from his father).† This deed constitutes very convincing evidence of the identity of Jonathan Neale of the 1725 marriage.

Jonathan Neale made his will on July 5, 1732, and it was proved eight days later. He describes himself as a husbandman, doubtless having abandoned his trade in his last years. He makes his "now wife" Mary his executrix, and leaves all of his property equally between his two sons Jonathan and David, mentioning his homestead and his north field lot (that inherited from his grandfather), and placing the boys in charge of "their mother Mary Neal my now wife."‡ Joseph Henfield was one of her bondsmen.

In 1734/5 "Mary Neal, formerly Mary Henfield," sold to Benjamin Lynde one-sixteenth of the three mills called the south gristmills given her by her grandfather Samuel Gardner of Salem.§ In 1737 and 1742, as executrix of Jonathan Neale she sold four and five acres in the north field to Cockerill Reeves and Abraham Watson respectively.¶ She may possibly be the Mrs. Neale who was buried in Salem on May 27, 1757.||

* Essex Probate, 302 : 175.

† Essex Deeds, 46 : 51.

‡ Essex Probate, 319 : 298-9.

§ Essex Deeds, 71 : 175.

¶ Essex Deeds, 73 : 139; 83 : 242.

|| It is only after long hesitation and considerable study that I have finally decided to place the brothers Jonathan and David as sons of Jonathan² Neale (*John*¹). Mr. Theodore Augustus Neale, writing in 1856 ("The Neal Record," Henry W. Dutton & Son, Boston), when his father, a grandson of David Neale, was still alive, stated that they were sons of Jonathan¹ (*Jeremiah*², *Lieut. Jeremiah*², *John*¹), a difference of two full generations. Both theories grant that the mother of the brothers was the widow Mary (Henfield) Marston, although Mr. Neale did not discover her maiden name.

The case against Mr. Neale's pedigree is as follows:—Jonathan¹ (*Jeremiah*², *Lieut. Jeremiah*², *John*¹) was baptized in 1714, after his parents had had three other children baptized. If he was baptized as an infant, he was only eleven years of age at the time of the marriage of Widow Mary Marston to a Jonathan Neale. If his baptism was for some reason delayed and he was the eldest child of his parents, who were married in 1705, he may have been nineteen or barely twenty at the time of the marriage. Mary (Henfield) Marston, if she was only fourteen at the time of her first marriage, which is possible but unlikely, was thirty-eight in 1725. In other words, giving the bride her lowest possible age and the groom his greatest possible age in 1725, we have a difference of eighteen years between them in the less probable way. On the other hand, if we decide that Jonathan¹ was baptized as an infant in the usual course, we find a suitable marriage for him with Elizabeth West on May 25, 1738. If the groom in this match was not

Children:—

- i. JONATHAN; he m. Annis (White?) before 1753, in which year he and his brother David sold land to Nathaniel Brown, Annis releasing dower.* The two brothers divided the remainder of the Lawes estate, including the homestead on Broad Street and the common rights "of which their father Jonathan Neal died seized" on May 26, 1753.† His children, Mary Neal, single, Abial Brown, Jonathan Neal, yeoman, Sarah Gardner, Benjamin Neal and David Neal, mariners, Hannah Smith, widow, and Lydia Osborn divided his estate on Sept. 30, 1799.‡

Children:—

1. *Jonathan*, bapt. Feb. 22, 1756; m. Polly Doust Jan. 23, 1785.
 2. *Hannah*, bapt. Feb. 22, 1756.
 3. *Lydia*, bapt. Feb. 22, 1756; m. Isaac Osborn, int. July 13, 1771.
 4. *Mary*, bapt. Feb. 22, 1756; d. unm. May 7, 1827.
 5. *Sarah*, bapt. Dec. 4, 1757; m. Joseph Gardner, Nov. 14, 1784.
 6. *Elizabeth*, bapt. June 29, 1760.
 7. *David*, bapt. Aug. 1, 1762.
 8. *Abial*, bapt. Oct. 28, 1764; m. Frederick Brown Oct. 26, 1794.
 9. *Benjamin*, bapt. April 12, 1767.
 10. *Joseph*; d. in 1789, aged 19.
- ii. DAVID; m. Hannah Webb June 8, 1752; ship captain, drowned in 1762, having been knocked overboard by the main boom of his vessel. His estate was valued at £862: 18: 8. Mrs. Neale died Feb. 14, 1817, aged 89.

Children:—

1. *David*, b. Oct. 1, 1752; d. Aug. 1, 1754.
2. *David*, bapt. Oct. 6, 1754; d. in infancy.
3. *David*, bapt. Nov. 14, 1756.
4. *Jonathan*, bapt. Jan. 14, 1759; m. Mehitable Eden, Jan. 11, 1784.
5. *Hannah*, bapt. Feb. 8, 1761.

5. JOSEPH² NEALE (*John*¹) was born in Salem 14: 1: 1659. His legacy from his grandfather Lawes was the two-acre lot on Essex Street which was originally the property of Thomas

Jonathan⁴, he becomes a mystery, there being no other Jonathan of marriageable age in 1738 recorded in the Salem Neale family.

For my theory, that the Jonathan Neale who married widow Mary Marston and had two sons, Jonathan and David, was Jonathan² (*John*³), we have first and foremost the fact that Jonathan and David possessed all of the real estate of Jonathan⁴, derived from his grandfather Lawes, which he had not himself aliened, in 1753. If they were not his sons, how did they, or their father, get it? Jonathan² had many other grand-nephews and nieces, and so it could not have been by the legal channel of intestacy. Nor do any deeds appear granting this property to them or to Jonathan⁴. In the second place, it is possible to follow Jonathan², calling himself a "cordwainer" up to ten or twelve years of the date of the Marston marriage, and after that date Jonathan "cordwainer" has a wife Mary to release dower to Lawes property in the deed of 1726. It is admittedly not usual in the eighteenth century for a bachelor of sixty-eight to achieve matrimony, but if such were the case, as seems undeniable in view of the evidence, a widow of forty would seem a wise choice.

* Essex Deeds, 98 : 133.

† Essex Deeds, 100 : 14.

‡ Essex Deeds, 166 : 70.

Antrum, sold to Mr. Lawes by Mr. Edmund Batter. From his father he obtained by will one-third of Watson and Hale's lot of fifteen acres, an acre of salt marsh and one-sixth of Adams' swamp. In his youth he served an apprenticeship with James Symonds.*

Joseph Neale married Judith Croad, daughter of Mr. Richard Croad, of Salem.

Neale sold one acre of his Lawes inheritance to Thomas Maule, merchant, in 1681.** He describes himself as a joiner. A few months later he sold his share of Adams' swamp to his brother Jeremiah.† On January 24, 1683/4, he leased for a term of ten years, at a rental of £9 per year, his grandfather Lawes' homestead, which had also been the home of his parents, from his brother Jonathan.†† He made a deposition in regard to the land of Frances Croad, his mother-in-law, in 1692, giving his age as thirty-three years. In 1695 he sold a further portion of the Essex Street land to Robert Kitchen, his wife Judith releasing her dower.‡ He was constable of Salem in 1692, the year of the witchcraft delusion, but aside from his returns on warrants for arrest, his name does not appear in the records of this hideous chapter of New England history.

Joseph Neale

Joseph Neal was living in Salem in 1707,§ but within the next two years he moved to Pennsylvania, where he had perhaps been temporarily established before, as the power-of-attorney which his brother Lieut. Jeremiah Neale exercised in 1709 was dated April 26, 1704.¶ Possibly his exact place of residence was Newcastle-upon-Delaware (actually within the state of Delaware) where we know that his daughter Mary Green lived. In 1718 he was dead, his children stating in an heirship deed "Whereas Mr. Joseph Neale formerly of Salem more lately of Pennsylvania dec'd" etc.|| Judith (Croad) Neale died before her husband.

Children:—

- i. JUDITH, b. 1683; d. Feb. 25, 1697/8; buried in the Charter Street burial-ground. "Here lyeth y^e body of Judith, Daut^r of Joseph & Judath Neale, Deceased. Feb. y^e 25th, 1697/8, in y^e 16th year of her age."

* Essex Deeds, 20 : 102.

** Essex Deeds, 6 : 26.

† Essex Deeds, 7 : 18.

†† Essex Deeds, 7 : 11.

‡ Essex Deeds, 11 : 148.

§ Essex Deeds, 20 : 150.

¶ Essex Deeds, 21 : 184.

|| Essex Deeds, 35 : 108.

- ii. **LYDIA.** She m. Samuel Ropes, son of John and Lydia (Wells) Ropes of Salem Jan. 12, 1709/10. He d. Oct. 12, 1761.

Children:—

1. *Lydia Ropes*, b. Dec. 3, 1710; d. Jan. 21, 1710/1.
2. *Lydia Ropes*, b. Dec. 23, 1711; d. May 13, 1780.
3. *Samuel Ropes*, b. Sept. 1, 1714; d. March 1, 1781.
4. *Sarah Ropes*, b. Aug. 7, 1717.
5. *Joseph Ropes*, b. Oct. 22, 1719.

- iii. **MARY.** She m. Anthony Green, and was late of Newcastle-upon-Delaware in Feb., 1718, when she was described as one of the children of Judith Neale, deceased, who was a daughter of Mr. Richard Croad.* Her interest in Croad property is stated to pass to her sisters Lydia Ropes and Hannah Neale and to her brother Joseph Neale, which leads to the conclusion that she died *s. p.*
- iv. **HANNAH;** m. James Grant April 4, 1720.

Children, baptized in Salem:—

1. *Mary Grant* (daughter of James and Sara), bapt. Jan. 20, 1722/3.
2. *William Grant*, bapt. Dec. 27, 1724.
3. *Hannah Grant*, bapt. June 5, 1726.
4. *Sarah Grant*, bapt. July 14, 1728.
5. *Hannah Grant*, bapt. Aug. 16, 1730.
6. *James Grant*, bapt. July 16, 1732.

- v. **JOSEPH.** Joseph Neale, "their only brother" purchased from Samuel Ropes and his wife Lydia, and Hannah Neale, singlewoman, their rights in one acre of pasture in Salem, formerly the property of Mr. Joseph Neale, formerly of Salem more lately of Pennsylvania, on March 6, 1718.† He m. Eunice Pickering, daughter of John and Hannah (Burrill) Pickering, on Dec. 10, 1724. He d. before Jan. 19, 1732/3, when his widow was appointed administratrix of his estate. She brought in an inventory showing an estate of £1199: 16 and debts of £201: 10: 4. In her account, dated May 11, 1737, she mentions the expense of bringing up two young children.‡ She m. her cousin William Pickering April 6, 1738, and had five children. He d. Feb. 17, 1765.

Children:—

1. *Joseph*, bapt. Nov. 21, 1725; d. young.
2. *Eunice*, bapt. May 28, 1727; Timothy Pickering was made guardian of Eunice and her sister Mary on Dec. 31, 1742; m. Benjamin Bacon Feb. 20, 1745.
3. *Mary*, bapt. April 5, 1730; m. Capt. John Foster of Salem and Manchester, July 9, 1752; m. second, Rev. John Cleveland of Chebacco, Sept. 28, 1769.

* Essex Deeds, 33 : 257.

† Essex Deeds, 35 : 108.

‡ Essex Probate, 318 : 87; 319 : 330; 322 : 199.

NORMAN

1. RICHARD NORMAN, born in England about the year 1580, came to America as an employee of the Dorchester Company, a group of capitalists and adventurers who established a small colony at Cape Ann in 1623. It is not certain that he was an original member of this settlement, which undoubtedly received additions from England from time to time, but we know that he and his family were among those who, upon the failure of the Cape Ann venture, moved to Naumkeag in 1626 under the leadership of Roger Conant and were established there upon the arrival of the Endicott migration in 1628. Testifying in 1680, Richard Brackenbury of Beverly, aged eighty, said that he came to New England with the late Governor Endicott and that when "wee came ashore at the place now called Salem . . . wee found living (there) Old Goodman Norman and his sonn . . . and others" who "owned that they came over upon the account of a company in England called by the name of Dorchester Company or Dorchester Merchants; they had sundry houses built at Salem . . . and they declared that they had a house built at Cape Ann for the dorchester company."* These pre-Endicott settlers became known in Salem history as the "old planters."

Richard Norman participated in the various grants made to the colonists in 1636, 1637 and 1640, and he had undoubtedly received a previous allotment of land of considerable size, as it is recorded that he and his son John sold one hundred acres to Capt. William Trask in 1636, and that Governor Endicott bought land near the head of Bass River, originally granted to Richard Norman and others, which purchase was confirmed to the governor by grant in 1643.

Norman was probably not of the Puritan persuasion and in 1650 we find him living on "Darby Fort side" (Marblehead) where he may possibly have settled some years previously, beyond the immediate influence of the Salem church-state, and where his defective fences caused his appearance in court.† The last record we have of him is in 1653, where Richard Norman "the elder" made over his house and ten acre lot in "Marvellhead

* Essex Deeds, 5 : 107.

† Records and Files, etc., 1 : 154.

upon Darbe Fort side" to his son Richard.* He probably died soon afterward.

Richard Norman's wife testified against Richard Cooke in 1645, but unfortunately her name was not recorded.

Children:—

- i. A DAUGHTER. On 17: 7: 1637 Sergeant Lockwood refused the grant of a houselot in Salem "beyond his father Norman's." There is no further record of Lockwood in Salem, and the theory has been advanced that he was that Robert Lockwood of Watertown, 1635, who eventually settled in Fairfield, Connecticut, and whose wife's name was Susanna.†
2. ii. JOHN.
- iii. MARGARET. She m. Robert Morgan, a cooper, who lived in that part of Salem first called Cape Ann Side and later organized as Beverly. He united with the Salem church in 1650 and was made a freeman on 29: 4: 1652. He signed the petition of the settlers on Cape Ann Side to be set off as a separate town in 1659, and when the Beverly church was organized he kept the first book of records. He was clerk of the writ in 1671 in which year he stated that he was seventy years of age. His will, dated Oct. 14, 1672, and probated June, 1673, mentions his wife Margaret, his son Samuel, to whom he left twelve acres of land at Manchester "which my wife's father Norman gave her in the g't plain," his sons Benjamin, Joseph, Robert and Moses, and his daughter Bethia, and appoints Ensign Corning and John Stone overseers. Margaret (Norman) Morgan m. Samuel Fowler of Salisbury and was living in 1690.

Children:—

1. *Samuel Morgan*, bapt. 23: 4: 1650, in Salem; m. Elizabeth Dixey, daughter of Capt. William Dixey, Dec. 15, 1658. (*See Dixey.*)
 2. *Luke Morgan*, bapt. 23: 4: 1650, in Salem; d. before 1672.
 3. *Benjamin Morgan*, bapt. 23: 4: 1650, in Salem; slain by Indians, "to the eastward" before July, 1677.
 4. *Joseph Morgan*, bapt. 23: 4: 1650, in Salem; m. Deborah Hart, daughter of John and Florence (Norman) Hart, his first cousin, July 12, 1669, in Lynn. (*See Hart.*)
 5. *Robert Morgan*, bapt. 15: 10: 1650, in Salem; d. s. p.
 6. *Moses Morgan*, d. s. p. before 1694.
 7. *Bethia Morgan*, bapt. 29: 3: 1653, in Salem; m. Samuel Weed, son of John and Deborah (Winsley) Weed of Amesbury, March 12, 1675/6.
3. iv. RICHARD.
 - v. FLORENCE. She m. John Hart of Marblehead as his second wife. (*See Hart.*) After his death in 1656, she m. Thomas² Whittridge of Ipswich. He was a son of William Whittridge, a carpenter, who came to New England on the "Elizabeth" in 1635. Thomas Whittridge died in 1672, and administration was granted to Robert Morgan and Richard Norman on Sept. 24 of that year. They filed the following document: "A declaration of the verball will of Thomas Whittridge deceased which wee Robert Morgan & Richard Norman present vnto this honoured Court. . . . Our

* Records and Files, etc., III: 368.

† New York Genealogical and Biographical Record, Vol. 58, p. 395.

brother Thomas Whittridge being sicke Sent vnto mee Robert Morgan: by 2 of his Sonnes desiring mee with speede to (send) to our brother Richard Norman: & that wee together would come Vnto him: which wee Accomplished & tarried not long: Uppon the 21st of August last past wee went to the howse of our brother: who findinge him Uppon his bedd: after mutuall greting & talk about gods Seuerall dispensations towards vs in o^r relations in generall: & to him & his family in pticular; he said hee had beine verry sicke but yesterday m^r newman administeringe phisick vnto him hee was revived & something better: so comming from his bedd and walking to & fro in his howse spake as foll: Brethren you being the most Intimate with vs and dearest in our affectons vnto mee & yo^r sister my wife now taken from mee in whom wee putt our Confidence: & in whom I doe Confide: of all our relations remaining aline: I have therefore Sent for you to decla(re) my mind Unto yow, w^{ch} is this: my desire & will is . . . to Committ vnto yo^u my 3 sonnes w^{ch} I had by yo^r sister: withall that smale Estate y^t god hath given mee: . . . (here follows a division of property between the sons, Thomas, Richard and William Whittridge) . . . to putt his s^d 3 Sonnes Unto trades such as they most desire: & wheare their affections most enclined to bee; but with their relations rather than any others: if possibly wee could bring it so to passe: This having spoken he lay downe vppon his bedd againe & wee according to our duty as the Lord enabled Vs sought unto god with him & for him by prer & in som tyme after departed from him: and all this tyme from our Comming Vnto him Untill our deptyng from him weare present his owne 3 Sonnes before mentioned: and his brother Sammuell Whittridge: and his Sonne in Law John Traske*.”†

Children, by Whittridge:—

1. *Thomas Whittridge.*
2. *Richard Whittridge.*
3. *William Whittridge.*

2. JOHN² NORMAN (*Richard*¹) was born about the year 1612, and passed his youth in the Cape Ann and Naumkeag settlements. He married Arabella ——— who was admitted to the Salem church in 1637. He was a carpenter and shipwright. He shared in the first grants to Salem settlers, and his first home was in the North Field, on land granted him in 1636, and on which he immediately built a house. The following year he had a small grant of twenty-five acres at Jeffrey's Creek (Manchester) and seems also to have had a share in four hundred acres in the same locality granted to "eight men," probably "old planters," and in 1640 he and sixteen others "belonging to ye Church & Towne of Salem . . . being straitned in our accomodations, so yt we are not able comfortably to subsist" petitioned the Court to be given power to erect a village at "Jeffereyes Creeke, lying so neere us & most of us having some small quantitye of ground allotted to us there alreadye."‡ He immediately conveyed his

* Essex Probate Files, No. 29780.

† Husband of Florence Hart.

‡ Records and Files, etc., VII : 163.

North Field homestead to Rev. Hugh Peter, but there is some doubt as to the date of his removal to Jeffrey's Creek.

Norman was made a commoner in Marblehead in 1647, and in 1650 he was definitely settled at Manchester and petitioning the court for permission to open a house of entertainment there, to sell wine and beer and to keep provisions and accommodations for men and horses. He was Manchester's constable in 1652 and

John Norman

again in 1663, and served on the Grand Jury in 1661, 1671 and 1672. He seems to have been of a somewhat combative disposition, being several times summoned to court for engaging in physical conflict with his neighbors, and on one of these occasions a battle royal seems to have taken place, John Norman, his son John and a servant being engaged on one side and John Pickworth and his three sons on the other.* His wife Arabella was also in court in 1657 for striking the wife of Nicholas Vinson, and it is amusing to find her appearing as a witness against John Ellettrap, who was tried for "profane swearing" in 1667, and testifying that the miserable defendant had said "plague take it."†

Among the papers in suits brought by Mr. George Emery and Capt. John Lathrop against John Norman for breach of contract in failing to finish two houses in Manchester are copies of the specifications in accordance with which the houses were to be built, and they are of great interest to all students of seventeenth-century architecture.‡

John Norman died in 1672, and his widow, Arabella Norman, was appointed administratrix in November of that year, and ordered to pay forty shillings to the eldest son and twenty shillings to each of the other children. An inventory of £125: 10 was presented.§ Arabella Norman died on November 23, 1679, and her son John, a ship-carpenter of Salem, was made administrator of the estates of both of his parents, his father's estate being valued at £150: 16 in 1680.¶ The Manchester homestead was sold to Obed Carter on Oct. 4, 1707.||

Children: —

- i. JOHN, bapt. March 4, 1637/8; m. Mary Ropes, daughter of George and Mary Ropes of Salem, 17: 9: 1663; sea-captain and ship-

* Records and Files, etc., I : 323, II : 107; 225.

† Records and Files, etc., III : 46.

‡ Records and Files, etc., II : 186, 282.

§ Essex Probate, 301 : 3.

¶ Essex Probate, 301 : 163.

|| Essex Deeds, 20 : 66.

builder, of Salem; prefix of respect; taken prisoner and plundered by a Dutch man-of-war off the Virginia coast in 1667; one of the administrators of his father-in-law's estate in 1670; Jury of Trials, 1677; member of the Salem troop in 1678, for him Norman Street, leading to his ship-yard in Salem, was named; d. May 6, 1713; his will dated April 10 and proved July 8, 1713, leaves his entire estate to his wife for life, and also mentions his daughter Abigail Green and his granddaughter Mary Norman, Mr. John Pickering and Mr. Simon Willard being named overseers;* administration *cum testamento annexo* granted to his son-in-law John Green Nov. 2, 1713, the widow and executrix having died Oct. 24, 1713, aged sixty-eight.

Children, born in Salem:—

1. *John*, b. 12: 9: 1664; d. 22: 9: 1664.
 2. *John*, b. 12: 10: 1666; d. *s. p.* before 1713.
 3. *Mary*, b. Feb. 14, 1668; d. *s. p.* before 1713.
 4. *Timothy*, b. Feb. 20, 1670; m. Abigail Cole Dec. 20, 1693; d. before May 24, 1695, when his widow Abigail Norman m. ——— Andrew. Mary Norman, his daughter, b. 10: 9: 1694, in Salem, is mentioned in her grandfather's will. She m. Theodore Atkinson June 13, 1715, and in 1721, stating that she was "granddaughter of Mr. John Norman late of Salem & y^e only surviving heir or heiress of that family," she sold Salem property to John Cabot.[†]
 5. *Richard*, b. Feb. 20, 1674; d. *s. p.* before 1713.
 6. *Abigail*, b. July 10, 1677; m. John Greene, who was administrator of her father's estate in 1713; in 1720 they deeded all their right in her father's land, buildings, house and wharf in Salem to her niece, Mary Atkinson, and her husband, Theodore Atkinson, shipwright;‡ d. *s. p.* before 1721.
- ii. **LYDIA**, b. Jan. 15, 1639/40; admonished in 1687 for being abroad at night where there was feasting and drinking, and for riding behind two fellows at eight o'clock at night without her master's or dame's consent;§ m. Thomas Bishop of Manchester, son of Richard and Dulcebella Bishop of Salem;¶ he d. Oct. 15, 1694; she was still living in 1704.

Children, born in Manchester:—

1. *Hanna Bishop*, b. March 14, 1661; m. Manning Day before 1702.
2. *Mary Bishop*, b. Aug. 5, 1664; widow of ——— Busco in 1702.
3. *John Bishop*, b. Oct. 17, 1667.
4. *Richard Bishop*, b. Dec. 25, 1669; d. at sea Oct. 7, 1703.
5. *Joseph Bishop*, b. Feb. 27, 1671; living in 1702.
6. *Lydia Bishop*, b. March 1, 1673; m. Francis Pierce before 1702.
7. *Elizabeth Bishop*, b. Sept. 6, 1676; m. John Williams of Beverly Nov. 1, 1705.
8. *Rebecca Bishop*, b. June 19, 1678; living in 1702.
9. *Thomas Bishop*, b. April 7, 1680; living in 1702.

* Essex Probate, 311: 11-12.

† Essex Deeds, 39: 106.

‡ Essex Deeds, 39: 6.

§ Records and Files, etc., II: 48.

¶ Supreme Judicial Court, No. 2285.

- iii. HANNAH, b. Jan. 4, 1642/3; bapt. as Anne 1: 3: 1642/3; if it were not for the fact that marriage with a deceased wife's sister was a court offense it might be suspected that she m. her brother-in-law Samuel Leach as his second wife and had three children, Hannah, Richard and Benjamin (1686-1692), the Leach family tradition being that Samuel Leach's wives were closely related and the Leach genealogists stating that his second wife was "his first wife's niece, Hannah Balden," which is proven not to be the case, Hannah being his first wife's daughter by her first husband, John Balden.
- iv. ARABELLA, b. Feb. 14, 1643/4; m. (1) John Balden Sept., 1664; m. (2) Samuel³ Leach (Robert², Lawrence¹); d. 1681; in 1681 Joseph Norman conveyed to Leach, his brother-in-law, all his rights in the estates of his father and mother, John and Arabella Norman;* he m. Hannah ———, and d. Oct. 14, 1696.

Children, by first husband: —

1. *Hannah Balden*, b. Oct. 15, 1667; in 1682 testimony was offered to make her the sole beneficiary of her uncle Richard Norman's estate; m. James Arden May 9, 1689.
2. *John Balden*, b. 26: 9: 1668.

Children, by second husband: —

3. *Penelope Leach*, b. Sept. 26, 1678.
4. *Catherine Leach*, b. Oct. 1, 1680; m. Joseph Allen Oct. 26, 1696.
5. *Samuel Leach*, b. May 8, 1681.

- v. MARTHA, bapt. May 17, 1646; living in 1681.
- vi. RICHARD, bapt. Oct. 5, 1651; m. Elizabeth Bullock 13: 1): 1671, in Salem, the record stating that he was "son of John"; d. *s. p.* April 17, 1682. "Richard Hawes, master of the ship Benjamin, testifies that on her voyage to the coast of Guinea, Richard Norman, late carpenter of said ship, being sick at St. May (?) declared it to (be) his last will and testament that his two brothers John and Joseph of Salem should have and enjoy all that he had or left in the world, published by the said Richard 17 April 1682, the same day in which he dec'd." John and Joseph gave bonds as administrators on June 15, 1682, and presented an inventory. Hannah Ward, aged about thirty-four, entered a deposition, however, stating that Richard gave the things that he left at her house to his cousin Hannah Balden "when he was going the last voyage wherein he dyed."†
- vii. JOSEPH, bapt. Sept. 8, 1653.
- viii. JOSEPH, bapt. Sept. 7, 1656; living in 1682.

3. LIEUT. RICHARD² NORMAN (*Richard*¹) was born about 1623, his age being given as fifty in 1673 and fifty-seven in 1680. His first appearance in the Essex County records is in 1643, when he was fined ten shillings "for carrying a burden on the Lord's day," his father answering for him. He lived in Marblehead with his father, and in 1653 the "old planter" deeded the homestead to him.‡ He married Margaret ——— about 1649.

* Essex Deeds, 6: 83.

† Essex Probate, 302: 20.

‡ Records and Files, etc., III: 368.

Richard Norman was engaged in the fishing trade and he also kept an inn, receiving a license each year from 1669 until 1679. In 1682 the selectmen again recommended his appointment by the Court, saying "the situation of our place being a Seaport towne, and the concourse of many strangers especially in the summer season being such that one particular house of enter-

Richard Norman

tainment cannot with any convenience accomodate all" . . . Left. Richard Norman "is one who will (we hope) endeavour to keep such good orders in his house that none may charge him with just matter of complaint."*

He served the town of Marblehead as selectman in 1670, 1671 and 1672, took the freeman's oath in 1680 and was the town constable that same year. His military career began in 1675 when he was ensign of the local foot company and four years later he was confirmed as its lieutenant. The town failed to send its quota of troops to the defense of the province in King Philip's War and was fined £10 for this neglect, and Lieut. Norman, as one of the military commissioners, petitioned the court that half of the fine be remitted. He served in the Jury of Trials in 1668, 1673, 1676 and 1677.

On August 11, 1683, a jury impanelled "to enquire to the untimely death of Lieut. Norman" found that being in a shallop at Moulton's Misery (Misery Island) he leapt out intending to swim ashore, but was drowned. Administration was granted to his widow Margaret Norman and Lieut. John Pickering and an inventory taken by Moses Maverick and James Dennis showed an estate of £393. Among the papers in the probate court docket is a list of Norman's children ——— Rebecka, Richard, William, John, Elizabeth, Joseph, Benjamin and Jonathan. The administrators were authorized to pay the widow and eldest son £30 apicce. Margaret Norman married Robert Goodwin October 15, 1685, and died before 1705 when administration on the estates of Mr. Richard Norman and Margaret his wife, both deceased, was granted to their eldest son, Mr. John Norman, joiner. He sued his step-father, Robert Goodwin, for his father's house in 1706.† The undivided estate then consisted of property valued at £226, including a tract of land at Dunstable. The death of John Norman again interrupted the settlement of the

* Records and Files, etc., VIII : 318.

† Supreme Judicial Court, No. 6962.

estate, and Moses Norman, a grandson, was appointed to complete it on March 15, 1708/9.*

Children:—

- i. REBECCA, b. about 1650; m. Edward Diamond of Marblehead, who was b. about 1642;** d. in 1732, aged eighty-two. In that year her children William, Thomas and Aholiah Diamond, Mary Tucker, Hannah Fettyplace, and her grandchildren Rebecca Treffry, Michael and John Wormistall sold to her son Joseph Diamond all their rights in the homestead of Edward and Rebecca Diamond at Marblehead.†

Children:—

1. *William Diamond*, b. May 9, 1671; a shoreman in Marblehead in 1732.
 2. *Mary Diamond*, b. Oct. 7, 1672; m. Andrew Tucker, Jr., of Marblehead Nov. 6, 1690, and was his widow in 1732.
 3. *Rebecca Diamond*; m. (1) Michael Wormistall July 5, 1696; had sons John and Michael and daughter Rebecca (who m. Thomas Treffry in 1715); she probably m. (2) Edward Hammond June 1, 1709.
 4. *Aholiah Diamond*, b. March 16, 1679; m. Lucy Bond Aug. 14, 1701; a fisherman in Beverly in 1732.
 5. *Thomas Diamond*, b. Jan. 28, 1684; m. Margaret Wilkins, June 6, 1706; a fisherman in Salem in 1734.
 6. *Edward Diamond*, bapt. Sept. 11, 1687.
 7. *Richard Diamond*, bapt. Sept. 11, 1687.
 8. *Joseph Diamond*, bapt. Oct. 7, 1687; of Salem in 1732.
 9. *Benjamin Diamond*, bapt. Nov. 24, 1689.
 10. *Hannah Diamond*, b. Oct. 28, 1694; m. William Fettyplace Feb. 21, 1714/15; living in Marblehead in 1732.
 11. *Rebecca Diamond*, b. 7: 16: 1695.††
- ii. RICHARD; his name appears in the list of the children of Lieut. Norman, attached to the inventory of the estate in 1682, but, as no further reference to him whatsoever is found, it is probable that he d. before reaching his majority.
- iii. WILLIAM; an apprentice of William Beale of Marblehead, from whom he ran away in 1665, being caught at Ipswich, placed in the jail and sentenced to be whipped ten stripes;‡ Beale assigned his interest in Norman to Capt. Thomas Savage, with the approval of the court, at the same session; m. Rebecca ———; d. before 1699 when Samuel Walton of Wenham deeded land to his widow;§ his widow, Rebecca, was a shop-keeper in Marblehead, and conveyed her two houses, goods and jewels to her son-in-law Joshua Orne in 1715/6;¶ Orne was appointed to administer her estate in 1723.‖

* Essex Probate, 303 : 103; 308 : 407; 310 : 88.

** Records & Files, VIII : 102.

† Essex Deeds, 61 : 230.

†† Possibly the clerk made an error in recording the name of this child, as Edward and Rebecca Diamond had a daughter Rebecca living in 1695.

The Cressey Genealogy, in the New England Historical and Genealogical Register, Vol. 31, p. 199, states that Rebecca, daughter of Edward and Rebecca Diamond, married Job Cressey of Salem, June 27, 1723. As this couple named a daughter Lucy, it is more likely that the wife of Cressey was Rebecca, daughter of Aholiah and Lucy (Bond) Diamond, who was born Jan. 13, 1703.

‡ Records & Files, III : 263.

§ Essex Deeds, 13 : 221.

¶ Essex Deeds, 29 : 261.

‖ Essex Probate, 318 : 178.

Child:—

1. *Elizabeth*; m. Joshua Orne Nov. 23, 1704.
- iv. JOHN, b. about 1658; m. Sarah Maverick, daughter of Moses and Eunice Maverick of Marblehead Nov. 10, 1683; appointed administrator of the estates of his father and mother, as eldest son, Sept. 3, 1705; will, dated Jan. 25, 1708/9, and proved Feb. 25, 1708/9, describing him as a carpenter and joiner, appoints his wife Sarah executrix and Mr. Richard Grover and Mr. Eleazer Ingalls overseers, and directs that his estate be divided when his youngest child reaches the age of eighteen.*

Children:—

1. *Richard*, b. Sept. 4, 1684; d. *s. p.* before 1723/4.
 2. *Margaret*; d. April 12, 1685.
 3. *Eunice*, bapt. March 21, 1686; m. Samuel Raymond of Beverly, mariner, Nov. 21, 1704; in 1720/1 he purchased from her brothers John and Joseph their right in the house in Marblehead given by their grandparents, Moses and Eunice Maverick, to their mother; ** widow, living in Marblehead in 1724.
 4. *Moses*, b. 1687; m. Anne Bullfinch in Boston Aug. 30, 1716; mariner; appointed administrator of the estates of his grandparents, Richard and Margaret Norman in 1708/9, and still acting as such in 1717; † will, dated Oct. 15, 1716, in Boston, leaves entire property to wife Anne; inventory Jan. 3, 1731; three children, Moses, John and Anne, wife of Thomas Eggleston. ‡
 5. *John*, b. 1690; d. young.
 6. *Sarah*, bapt. May 14, 1693; m. John Broughton of Marblehead Dec. 3, 1718; in 1723 she sold to her brother John a house and land inherited from her grandfather Maverick; she joined in the 1723/4 deed to Joseph Neal.
 7. *Benjamin*, b. 1694; d. young.
 8. *John*, bapt. April 26, 1696; m. Mary Cox Sept. 15, 1720; fisherman; administration granted to widow Mary July 5, 1725.§
 9. *Benjamin*, bapt. Oct. 8, 1699; cordwainer and fisherman of Marblehead; with his brother John sells house and land ¶ given to their mother Sarah Norman by their grandparents Moses and Eunice Maverick to their brother-in-law Samuel Raymond, in 1720/1.
 10. *Jonathan*, b. 1701; d. before 1723/4.
 11. *Elizabeth*, bapt. Sept. 8, 1706; m. William Edgella in Boston Aug. 2, 1725; sold property inherited from her parents to Joshua Orne, husband of her cousin Elizabeth Norman, July 26, 1725.||
- v. ELIZABETH; m. (1) Aboliah Diamond Jan. 8, 1685/6; m. (2) William Hine Nov. 13, 1688; purchased a portion of her father's

* Essex Probate, No. 10560.

** Essex Deeds, 39 : 184.

† Essex Probate, 310 : 88; Essex Deeds, 36 : 105.

‡ In a deed to Philip English, in 1719, Moses Norman of Boston, mariner, is stated to be only son of John Norman of Marblehead, shipwright (Essex Deeds, 36 : 16). In 1723/4, however, Moses Norman of Boston, mariner, joins his two brothers and three sisters, all described as children of John Norman of Marblehead, in a conveyance to Joseph Neal of Salem (Essex Deeds, 43 : 73). The first description is obviously an error.

§ Essex Probate, 314 : 221; 316 : 25.

¶ Essex Deeds, 39 : 184.

|| Essex Deeds, 47 : 37.

land from her nephew, Moses Norman, the relationships being fully described, June 10, 1711;* d. Oct. 15, 1716; in 1722 William Hine and wife Mary conveyed to William Hinc, Jr., the house of his grandfather, Richard Norman.†

Child, by first husband:—

1. *Susanna Diamond*, bapt. Sept. 11, 1687, in Marblehead; m. Joseph Woolcomb March 30, 1713, in Marblehead.

Children, by second husband:—

2. *William Hine*, bapt. March 29, 1691.
3. *Richard Hine*, bapt. Jan. 6, 1694/5.
4. *Joseph Hine*, bapt. March 21, 1695/7.
5. *Elizabeth Hine*, b. April 3, 1700.
6. *Hannah Hine*, bapt. March 14, 1701/2.
7. *Benjamin Hine*, bapt. Sept. 16, 1705.

- vi. **JOSEPH**; m. Mary Collins Jan. 24, 1688/9; his widow Mary appointed administratrix of his estate and an inventory filed Nov. 18, 1691;‡ she m., second, Henry Hooper of Marblehead, who was made joint administrator Dec. 6, 1692.
- vii. **BENJAMIN**; d. young.
- viii. **JONATHAN**; administration granted to his step-father and chief creditor, Robert Goodwin, April 21, 1713;§ in 1714, Goodwin sued Moses Norman, as administrator of the estates of his grandparents, Richard and Margaret Norman, for Jonathan Norman's one-seventh share thereof, stating that one child of Mr. and Mrs. Norman had died before reaching majority.

* Essex Deeds, 39 : 176.

† Essex Deeds, 38 : 276.

‡ Essex Probate, 303 : 95, 101.

§ Essex Probate, 310 : 539.

The Ancestry of James Patten

INTRODUCTION

THE title of this pamphlet, *The Ancestry of James Patten*, is to a great extent deceptive, for on the paternal side James Patten's father is his only "ancestor" now, or likely to be, discovered, while on the maternal side we can trace a slight three generations to a shadowy great-grandfather. However, the pamphlet is the seventh in a series dealing with the ancestry of my great-great-grandparents, and for the sake of uniformity it is so entitled. Actually it deals with the descendants of six men who emigrated to New England in the early years of the eighteenth century, four of them being the brothers Matthew Patten of Biddeford, Hector Patten of Saco, Robert Patten of Arundel, and William Patten of Boston. The fifth, William Patten of Wells, presumably a close kinsman of the brothers, is included as by so doing all of the Patten emigrants who settled in Maine are conveniently grouped in one volume, while the sixth, James Johnston, finds an appropriate place herein as his granddaughter was James Patten's mother.

All of these men were of Scotch descent, springing from families which left Scotland in the seventeenth century, encouraged by the British government, to settle in the northern counties of Ireland which formed the ancient kingdom of Ulster, where they became a tough and unwelcome minority. After nearly a hundred years of religious, political and economic struggle, siege and famine, which resulted in an ingrained hatred both for the Celtic Irish and for the English, hundreds of Ulster Scots prepared to undertake the long voyage to America. Soon all of the colonies from Maine to Georgia began to receive these new-comers, almost as foreign to the original English stock as they had been to the Irish. Some few remained in the seaport towns where their voyage ended, but, clannish to an extreme, the great majority settled in large groups on the fringes of colonial population where new land could be had for a low price. To distinguish them from the ethnic Irish whose emigration did not begin in force until the middle years of the nineteenth century, American historians have called them the "Scotch-Irish." This convenient term is very annoying to writers of Irish descent whose chosen field has been the contribution of the people of Ireland to American life, but as many descendants of these later emigrants, after a hundred years in America, persist in calling themselves "Irish-Americans," or simply Irish, their objections to the use of "Scotch-Irish" seem somewhat childish.

It is my belief that our Patten family originated in Scotland and not in England. Since surnames have existed, there have been Patons, Pattons and Pattens in the central and lowland counties of Scotland and in the nineteenth century about fifteen in every ten thousand Scots bore the name. The few Patten families in northern England are more likely to be of Scottish stock than descendants of twelfth-century lords of "Patine" in the southern county of Essex, a place which, by the way, is not mentioned in the histories of Essex or in the topographical dictionaries of England. Burke's *Landed Gentry* which Mr. Lower gives as evidence for "Patine" in his *Patronymica Britannica*, is undoubtedly the worst possible authority. Some writers on the subject of surnames suggest that the name is occupational, being given to makers of pattens or clogs, others suggest that it is a diminutive of Patrick, that given-name having always been common in Scotland. Patterson, a frequent Scotch name, is usually said to be derived from Patrick's son. The most scientific theory in regard to the meaning of Patten, however, would seem to be that it comes from the word *pect* (Pict) which was the Saxons' name for the tribes who dwelt in the lowlands of Scotland at the beginning of the historical period.* If the name comes from any or all of these possibilities it is obvious that, when surnames were first adopted in Scotland, many separate and unrelated individuals may have been called Patten and founded families of the name. It should not be necessary to point out that spelling was purely a matter of choice before the appearance of Dr. Johnson's dictionary, and that in proper names it has to a great extent remained so. One branch of the Maine family of Patten was quite consistently "Patting" for several decades of the nineteenth century. Paton and Patton are at present the commoner spellings in Scotland and the southern states, while Patten is more frequent in England and New England.

The public records of Ulster for the seventeenth century are, compared to those of England, practically non-existent, and we cannot hope to discover the parentage of our Maine Pattens. That the name was widely borne in Ulster is obvious from the fact that Pattens are found in more than average numbers in the Scotch-Irish settlements in Georgia, Carolina, Pennsylvania, New Hampshire and Maine. To successfully leap the gap between Ireland and Scotland is even more remotely improbable. Inasmuch as the use of a coat-of-arms is a personal right inherited

* See *Surnames as a Science*, by Robert Ferguson, M.P., F.S.A. (Scot.), 1834, p. 87.

by a provable male descent from a legal grantee or an ancestor whose arms have been generally recognized, it follows that the Maine Pattens, whose European ancestry is totally unknown, have no shadow of a claim to the arms of an English or Scotch family of Patten. The common possession of a surname has in itself nothing whatever to do with the common possession of a coat-of-arms, and the proprieties are violated in exactly the same degree when a Maine Patten adopts and uses the coat of the Pattens of county Lancaster as when he adopts and uses the coat of the Stuarts or the Tudors.

It was possibly the publication of Mr. Folsom's *History of Saco and Biddeford* in 1830 and the researches which Mr. Bradbury may have already begun for his *History of Kennebunkport* which first aroused an interest in genealogy in our Patten family. In 1830 Capt. John² Patten (*Robert², Matthew¹*), then living in Portland, wrote to Capt. Hugh³ Patten (*Actor,² Robert¹*) in Topsham asking what he knew about the origin of the family. Capt. Hugh referred the matter to John⁴ Patten (*Robert,³ John,² Hector¹*) of Bowdoinham who wrote the following letter which has fortunately been preserved.*

Bowdoinham, May 10, 1830

DEAR SIR,

A letter from you to Mr. Hugh Patten of Topsham, was, a few days ago, put into my hands, requesting information respecting our ancestors. The following I have collected from my father, now nearly 87 years of age, & is all that I am in possession of on the subject. Whether correct or not, I have no means of determining; but such as it is, I communicate it with pleasure.

My father's grandfather, Actor Patten, was born in Ireland, county of Derry & town of Dimbo, Colerain being the principal market town in the vicinity. He came to America, probably as you state, in company with his brothers William and Robert, about the year 1727, his oldest son, John Patten, my grandfather, being then ten or eleven years old. He landed in Boston & from Boston came to Falmouth now Portland & settled in Saco, in a part of said town then called Old Orchard. After residing in Saco about 40 years, he removed, a short time before the war of the Revolution, to Frenchman's Bay where he died, but at what time or at what

* Now in the hands of Eliza (Ward) LeGallee of Biddeford Pool, a great-granddaughter of Capt. John Patten.

age is unknown. His first wife's name was Suter, his second he married in this country, a widow, of the name of Armstrong. He was an Elder in the church to which he belonged in Ireland, & was esteemed a very religious man. He was a Protestant, & in his religious opinions, a Calvinist. His ancestors came to Ireland from Scotland, but at what period is unknown. He had three sons, John, William & Matthew. William has no male descendants now living, those of John and Matthew are considerably numerous. His brother William settled & died in Boston, & his descendants are now extinct. His youngest brother Robert settled in Saco or vicinity, & was the grandfather of Mr. Hugh Patten of Topsham. Of his other brother, Matthew, who came over, it seems, first to this country, I have learnt nothing in addition to what is stated in your letter. The Pattens in Topsham & vicinity all descended from Actor & Robert. Hector & Actor are names undoubtedly of the same individual, & the same, mentioned by you, as living in Saco in 1739.

Yours respectfully

JOHN PATTEN.

Three years later John Patten again wrote to another John Patten, who from the context would appear to be John⁴ (*Actor*,³ *Actor*,² *Robert*¹), and there are a few additions and variations in this second letter. He states that Hector Patten's children were by his first wife. Possibly some one of the Patten ship-captains had already made superficial inquiries in regard to the family in London, for in this letter the "Patine in Essex County" theory makes its first appearance. It is rather disturbing to find him writing, in both letters, that William³ Patten (*Hector*¹) had no male descendants. That line was, to be sure, very near extinction, but in Richmond, not many miles away from Bowdoinham, lived a William Patten, the only grandson of William³ (*Hector*¹), whose identity seems to be indisputable. He says that the "youngest brother, Robert, . . . left three sons, Actor Patten, your father, who married Anne, daughter of William Wilson . . . Robert Patten of Litchfield and another whose name is not known and who probably settled in the eastern part of Maine." In fact there were four sons, Actor Patten who married Anne Wilson was Robert's grandson as was Robert Patten of Litchfield, and none of the four settled in eastern Maine. This is a good example of how misleading personal accounts of family relationships can be.

In 1863 John Patten again wrote his recollections of what his father had told him but the additions are even less trustworthy.

Since then the Patten family has been dealt with in Wheeler's *History of Brunswick and Topsham*, in a type-written genealogy by Rev. Charles Sinnett and in a genealogy by Mr. Howard Parker Moore. As a genealogist Mr. Sinnett is negligible, but he performed a service by gathering Bible and family records from hundreds of correspondents, covering dozens of families in the Kennebec region. An amusing feature of his work is his habit of attributing a long list of pious and moral characteristics to practically every individual of whom he wrote, when, as a matter of fact, he knew nothing whatever of their characters. Mr. Moore wrote primarily of the New Hampshire Pattens, giving secondary consideration to the Maine families, and he was handicapped by the fact that he did not know of the existence of Matthew Patten of Biddeford and William Patten of Wells and their descendants. Nor does this pamphlet pretend to be a complete genealogy, if such a thing is possible. It does, however, straighten out the first three or four generations of a very complicated family, and should be useful to the ultimate Patten genealogist.

John Patten's letter of 1830 contains the earliest statement that Matthew, Hector, Robert and William Patten were brothers, and when he wrote it grandsons of the first three were still living. There is also some circumstantial evidence. William mentioned two children of Matthew in his will. William's son Robert assisted Hector's son Matthew in his land purchases. Robert named his eldest son Hector, while Hector had sons William and Matthew. Personally I have no doubt that this tradition is based on fact, unlike many stories of brother emigrants, in which "three brothers" is almost uniform and generally false.

This has been my first excursion into nineteenth-century genealogy and I have learned the surprising lesson that one can place no reliance on dates from any source. In one case a newspaper, a family Bible, a gravestone and a town record supplied four different dates for one death. In one Bible the deaths of two children were entered as taking place weeks before their births. In hardly a case, where there were two records involving dates, did they agree. To have stated the source of each date would have taken much unnecessary space, and, at that, my guess as to the correct one might well be wrong. After all, it is the facts of birth, marriage and death and the relationship which is important, not the exact day of the event.

Many members of the family have kindly supplied me with information, and to Miss Mary Pelham Hill of Topsham, Mrs. James Quine of Bangor and Miss Sybil Noyes of Saco I am grateful for intelligent research which in some cases approached the technique of the detective.

THE ANCESTRY OF JAMES PATTEN

MATTHEW PATTEN

1. MATTHEW PATTEN was born in Ireland about the year 1691. With his wife, Margaret, and at least one child, he came to New England in the first wave of Scotch-Irish emigration and settled in Wells, Maine, where he was granted fifty acres of land by the town proprietors on July 12, 1720. In 1721 he "recognized his baptismal covenant" in the Wells church and had his son baptized. He was a blacksmith by trade. After living on his Wells grant for six years, he sold the land to Richard Deane, Margaret Patten releasing her dower, and purchased from William Jones of Boston another fifty acre tract on the north side of the Saco River in the town of Biddeford,* with two smaller lots of pasture of six acres each, one being on Goosefair Brook.†

Matthew Patten

From Biddeford Patten moved farther east to Falmouth, his skill as a smith being in demand, and the latter town made him a grant of land in lots of varying size, but in 1730 Matthew Patten "of Falmouth" was again purchasing property in Biddeford, another fifty acre farm from John Tarr, for £200.‡ Two years later he sold his Falmouth house and grants, only the smaller portion of which had been laid out, to Mr. Samuel Waldo and Col. Thomas Westbrook,§ and within a month bought from Joshua Cheever a house and one hundred acres on the southwest side of the Saco River in Biddeford, giving in return a mortgage which he finally discharged in 1745.|| In 1733 he and Thomas Gilpatrick, another Ulsterman, bought six acres of marsh at Winter Harbor.¶ The Tarr fifty acres was sold to Benjamin Hill

* Now in the town of Saco.

† York Deeds, 12: 87, 860.

‡ York Deeds, 16: 260.

§ York Deeds, 16: 94.

|| York Deeds, 15: 233; 25: 111.

¶ York Deeds, 15: 189.

in 1734 for £350, a transaction which brought Patten £150 more than he had paid for the property four years before.*

Land speculation apparently appealed to Patten. Beyond the settled fringe of the seacoast lay vast tracts of wild and vacant land. By 1752 he had bought from William Neck and James Morgan of Marblehead one-quarter of their great holdings up the Saco River and on its easterly bank—one lot of one hundred and another of four hundred and ninety acres† and had added some forty-seven acres to his Biddeford farms.‡

This seems to have marked the end of his accumulative period. Fifty acres of the Neck and Morgan purchase were sold to Joshua Hooper in 1748,§ and thereafter he figures as grantor only when dealing with his sons.

Matthew Patten, was, like most of the Ulster emigrants, a Presbyterian, and in 1739 he and others petitioned the town of Biddeford that "those who call themselves Presbyterians be set off from support of Rev. Mr. Willard," but met with refusal. Probably he became reconciled to the local forms of worship as the new meeting-house (Biddeford lower parish) was built upon his land in 1759.

The last mention of Margaret Patten is in 1734, when she released her dower in a deed. In a deed of 1748 she is not named and presumably had died before that date.

Matthew Patten died in Biddeford September 25, 1773, in his 83rd year.|| His will, dated August 31, was admitted to probate on October 12, 1773. He left his farm on the Saco River in Biddeford to his sons Robert and John, who were named executors. Also to the sons were given two-fifths of the land at Deerwander which belonged to his deceased son James, his salt marsh at Leighton's Point, one-half of his interest in the saw-mill at the falls in Biddeford, two cows, a horse and all of his clothes. To his beloved daughters Lydia and Susanna, two-thirds of the Weare's landing land in Pepperellboro, bought from William Neck, all his right in the grist-mill on the western side of Saco River, the other half of his interest in the saw mill in Biddeford, all of his household goods, four cows, two-fifths of the land at Deerwander, that part of "my old homestead farm which lies next to Thomas Emery's land" and pasturage and wood-cutting privileges. To his beloved daughter Jane, one-fifth of the Deerwander land and one-

* York Deeds, 17: 87.

† York Deeds, 26: 46; 29: 226.

‡ York Deeds, 27: 138; 32: 210.

§ York Deeds, 27: 100.

|| *New Hampshire Gazette*, issue of Oct. 1, 1773.

third of the land in Pepperellboro. Witnesses: Moses Morrill, Simon Wingat, Paul Junkins.*

Children:

- i. JANE, b. about 1717; m. in Biddeford July 28, 1743, John Gray; d. in 1810, aged 93.
- ii. JOHN, bapt. in Wells Aug. 6, 1721; d. young.
- iii. ELISHA, bapt. in Wells May 31, 1724; d. young.
- iv. SUSANNA, b. about 1725; d. in Biddeford March 9, 1818, aged about 88, unmarried.
- v. JAMES, b. about 1730. In 1755 he bought from his brother-in-law John Gray one-eighth of a saw-mill in Biddeford "above the ruins of the old fort," calling himself yeoman, and in 1759 he sold half of his interest in the mill to his father who on the same day deeded him the fifty-acre farm on the east bank of the river which he had held since 1726. In partnership with Gray and Thomas Donnell he embarked on a heavy speculation in 1760, buying from Thomas Highborn *et als.* a tract of five hundred acres on the Saco River, twelve miles above the lower falls in what was known as Deerwander. The three grantees divided this tract in 1764. He d. Aug. 8, 1770, "aged 40 odd," "by a Fall under the Mill in Biddeford, laid 2 Days & $\frac{1}{2}$ Senseless."† He was apparently a bachelor. His brothers Robert and John were appointed administrators on Dec. 11, 1770, James being described as a mariner. They brought in an inventory of £506, including his interest in the saw-mill, his fifty acre farm with a house and barn thereon, and his share in the Deerwander purchase, then estimated at four hundred and twenty-nine acres. Some real estate was sold to discharge debts, among the creditors being his uncle, William Patten of Boston.‡
- vi. LYDIA; living in Boston in 1770 when she received a legacy from her uncle William Patten; joined with sister Susanna in the sale of two-thirds of one hundred and twenty acres to Thomas Sinnott in 1784; with sisters Jane Gray and Susanna Patten and brother Robert, sold portions of the Deerwander acreage in 1799; d. before 1802, unmarried.§
2. vii. ROBERT, b. June 21, 1732.
- viii. CAPT. JOHN; m. after Oct. 1759, Hannah (Means) Harmon, widow of Nathaniel Harmon of Scarborough; drowned in wreck of sloop *Judith* off Marshfield, Mass., in 1788, *s.p.*; widow Hannah Patten d. in Buxton, where she had lived with her son Maj. Thomas Harmon, Nov. 19, 1823. In partnership with his brother Robert he purchased property in Pepperellborough in 1765 and 1772, and was deeded land and one-sixteenth of the saw-mill in the same town by their father. They also bought land in Bowdoinham and Pownalborough. He was a legatee of his uncle, William Patten of Boston, in 1770. On Nov. 28, 1778, Capt. John Patten's slave Chloe married Capt. Benjamin Hooper's Cato. His brother Robert was appointed administrator of his estate in Oct. 1783, the inventory amounting to £529. Land in Biddeford, encumbered by legacies to his sisters Lydia and Susanna from their father, was sold in 1786 to Joseph Hill to pay debts.||

* York Probate. 12: 259.

† Pepperellborough First Church records.

‡ York Deeds, 34: 179; 35: 237, 239; 37: 113; 39: 66; 43: 75; 47: 97; York Probate, No. 14517.

§ York Deeds. 51: 240; 69: 112; 70: 106.

|| York Deeds. 94: 274; 40: 294; 45: 193; 52: 149; York Probate, No. 14621.

2. ROBERT² PATTEN (*Matthew*¹) was born in Biddeford June 21, 1732. He was over fifty when he married Susanna Goodwin on May 8, 1784, and there is no evidence in the town records or in his very numerous deeds that he had a previous wife. He died March 14, 1819, aged eighty-four.* Mrs. Patten, who was born July 29, 1764, died May 4, 1841, aged seventy-seven, of consumption, in Portland.

In deeds he is called mariner, trader, merchant, yeoman and gentleman, and in 1808 he must also have been a ship-builder as there is a record of his having a nearly completed vessel on the stocks. In 1778 he was a member of Capt. Nason's train band. Most of his very active life seems to have been occupied with real estate, however, and, while his brother John lived, they operated in partnership. They began by buying one hundred acres in Pownalborough (Woolwich) from Ebenezer and Alexander Gray and seventy-four acres in Bowdoinham from Aaron Hinkley in 1762 and 1763.† As this was the time of the settlement of their Arundel and Saco cousins in Topsham, it is possible that Robert and John also contemplated moving to the Kennebec region, but, if so, they changed their plan and remained in Biddeford, but it was not until 1791 that Robert sold the Bowdoinham land.‡ Beside picking up small lots in Biddeford, Saco and Brownfield, they had great acreages to dispose of after the deaths of their brother James in 1770 and their father in 1773.

In the diary of Matthew Patten of Bedford, New Hampshire, a valuable document begun in 1754 and ended in 1790, Robert Patten is twice mentioned. On January 16, 1779, Matthew Patten says "we had a far out cousin come from Saco to see us," and three months later, on April 25, there is an entry "Mr. Wheeler preached in Bedford he came on the 22d by recommendation from my friend Robt Patten of Biddeford." Possibly they knew the degree of their cousinship, or it may have been a vague relationship based on their common name and Ulster origin.

Some of Patten's land transactions are difficult to follow. On March 2, 1786, he deeded a two hundred acre tract to Josiah Hill, who deeded it back to him on March 22, but in 1787 it was again conveyed to Hill encumbered with Matthew Patten's legacies to his daughters Lydia and Susanna.§ In 1799 he and his sisters, widow Jane Gray and the two spinsters, Lydia and Susanna, began selling in Phillipsburg (now Dayton and Hollis),|| and in

* *Weekly Visitor*.

† *Lincoln Deeds* 3: 30; 4: 204.

‡ *Lincoln Deeds*, 27: 232.

§ *York Deeds*, 49: 35; 52: 142.

|| *York Deeds*. 63: 112.

1802, Lydia having died, the other three petitioned for a division of their Phillipsburg estate.* Caesar Patten, who witnessed the 1799 deed, was a family slave.

After 1803 the sales became very frequent and one suspects that Patten was hard pressed for money, for in 1808 begins a series of executions against him which were satisfied by his vessel on the stocks at Biddeford and the sale of small tracts of land. He conveyed the unsold balance of the Deerwander property to his sons John and Nathaniel in 1808, sold a share in a saw-mill to Samuel Pierson and mortgaged land to Jotham Perkins.† More executions followed in 1809 and 1810, and after mortgaging his home farm on the Winter Harbor road to Ichabod Fairfield,‡ he was so involved that he conveyed away his equity of redemption in two small lots to Samuel Hill and Dr. John Allen. His last deeds were to his son John Patten, merchant, of Arundel, in 1812 and 1814, of what appears to be his house (and presumably his father's) with no explanation of why the process was repeated.§ Probably he and his widow spent their last days with this son.

Children¶

- i. POLLY, b. Aug. 11, 1784; d. July 22, 1784 (*sic*).
- ii. PEGGY, b. Aug. 11 (*sic*), 1785; d. Aug. 2, 1785 (*sic*).
3. iii. JOHN, b. June 22, 1787.
- iv. MERTABLE, b. Nov. 29, 1789; m. in Arundel Dec. 24, 1816, Joseph Perkins, Jr.; d. Aug. 27, 1830.
- v. POLLY, b. Feb. 15, 1792; m. Nov. 24, 1818, Thomas Mayer; d. Nov. 3, 1820.
- vi. NATHANIEL, b. Nov. 3, 1794; a student at Saco Academy in 1814; a mariner of Saco in 1825;** lost at sea in 1828, apparently unmarried.
- vii. FANNY, b. Dec. 25, 1797; m. (1) Sept. 15, 1816, Thomas Harmon who d. May 12, 1817; m. (2) June 6, 1825, Joseph G. Cole; d. Oct. 1840, at Newburyport.
- viii. ISABEL, b. March 3, 1801; d. May 12, 1801.
- ix. BETSEY, b. Dec. 27, 1802; m. Oct. 10, 1824, Alvah Josselyn; d. Nov. 4, 1827, in Freeport.††

3. CAPT. JOHN³ PATTEN (*Robert*,² *Matthæ*¹) was born in Arundel June 22, 1787. He married Olive Lassell, daughter of Israel and Abigail (Hill) Lassell of Biddeford, in August (or June 10), 1807. He was an inn-keeper, auctioneer and merchant in Arundel from 1809 to 1820 when he moved to Portland where

* York Deeds, 70: 106.

† York Deeds, 79: 132, 141.

‡ York Deeds, 83: 81.

§ York Deeds, 83: 166; 88: 279.

¶ Dates are taken from Robert Patten's Bible, now in the possession of his descendant James Sawyer Ward of Biddeford.

** York Deeds, 118: 165.

†† *American Patriot* of Nov. 6, 1827.

he kept a hotel on Middle Street. He died in Portland February 20, 1834, and is buried in a tomb which he constructed in the Eastern Cemetery. His widow, Olive Patten, who was born June 11, 1789, died February 11, 1864, in Biddeford. Her will, made May 3, 1859, left her interest in her father's farm to her grandson John Patten Ward, and the residue of her estate to her legal heirs who were listed as Charles S. Patten, Caroline A. Mudge, Abby P. Ward, Frances P. Haines and Anna H. Patten.*

Children:†

- i. CHARLES SIGOURNEY, b. March 13, 1803; m. Nov. 12, 1844, Ellen Clarissa Brown, daughter of Samuel Silsby and Mary Louisa (Capron) Brown; accountant and pay-master at Water Power Co. (now the Saco-Lowell Shops); d. Feb. 23, 1881, in Saco; his will, made Nov. 10, 1864, left his estate to his widow and named as executor his nephew Charles Clidden Haines;‡ his widow d. Jan. 5, 1901, in Los Angeles.

Children, born in Saco:

1. *Olive Lassell*, b. June 21, 1850; d. in Saco June 20, 1851.
 2. *Ellen Louise*, b. May 23, 1852; d. Aug. 25, 1852.
 3. *Frances Mary*, b. Oct. 17, 1855; m. Rufus Albert Fairfield Dec. 20, 1876, in Saco. They were the parents of Rear Admiral Arthur Philip Fairfield, U. S. N.
 4. *Charles Sigourney*, b. April 24, 1860; a jeweller in Rochester, N. Y., and Boston, Mass.; d. unmarried in Florida about 1935.
- ii. ABIGAIL LASSELL, b. Oct. 4, 1809; m. July 1, 1833, Horace Ward; d. Aug. 26, 1882, in Biddeford. Ward, in partnership with his brother-in-law Enoch Mudge, owned the St. Charles and Verandah hotels in New Orleans, where he d. of yellow-fever in 1847. Four sons, *John Patten Ward* (b. in Portland Dec. 2, 1834; m. at Dover, N. H., Sept. 18, 1857, Anna Palfrey; d. May 18, 1901), *George Horace Ward* (b. April 13, 1838; d. unmarried July 26, 1868, from malaria contracted in the Union army, having been a captain in the 27th Maine regiment), *Charles Fay Ward* (b. June 26, 1839; dentist; d. unmarried at Biddeford Pool Dec. 22, 1921) and *Edward Ward* (b. Aug. 9, 1840; d. young).
 - iii. CAROLINE A., b. Aug. 6, 1811; m. May 9, 1832, Enoch Redington Mudge; d. Jan. 9, 1882. Seven children.
 - iv. JOHN EARON, b. Dec. 20, 1812; Bowdoin College, 1832; m. Sept. 15, 1835, Julia M. H. Whittier of Bangor; drowned in the Ohio River April 25, 1836, soon after he had begun to practice law. His widow m. second — Lumbert, by whom she had two daughters, Ellen Lumbert (Mrs. Parke) and Lily Lumbert (Mrs. Nightingale).

* York Probate, No. 14627.

† The Patten Bible records differ somewhat from the Lassell Bible records. The Lassell dates have been used.

‡ York Probate, No. 14014.

Child, born in Portland:

- I. *Ann Hathaway*, b. Nov. 16, 1836; m. (1) in Bangor June 2, 1864, Charles S. Twambley of Saco who d. Sept. 3, 1864; m. (2) in Chicago Aug. 2, 1868, Abraham Levins of Dubuque, Iowa; d. July 16, 1924. Four children (Levins).
- v. **FRANCES ISABELLA**, b. April 21, 1815; m. Jan. 14, 1839, Augustine Haines; d. Jan. 13, 1894. Haines was agent of the Laconia mills in Biddeford.
- vi. **OLIVE LASSELL**, b. July 11, 1817; d. unmarried Aug. 8, 1838, in Portland.

HECTOR PATTEN

1. HECTOR PATTEN is said, by his grandson Robert Patten of Topsham, to have come to America from Dimbo, near Coleraine, in the county of Derry,* Ireland, in the year 1727. He goes on to say that Hector Patten's first wife was named Suter,† and that she died in this country. The information was given to Robert Patten's son John, who committed it to writing, in 1830, when Robert was in his eighty-seventh year.‡ In 1863 John Patten again wrote down his recollections of what his father had told him about the origin of the family, and this account, being thirty years later, is less trustworthy. He quotes the old man as saying: "My grandfather, Actor Patten, was born in Ireland, county of Derry and town of Dimbo, now Belfast, and came to America in or about the year 1727: his eldest son, my father John Patten, being then about ten years old." Belfast is not in county Londonderry but in county Antrim, and it was never called Dimbo. In county Londonderry, five miles west of Coleraine, there is a village of Dunboe, however, which was undoubtedly Hector Patten's home. Later generations added a baptismal name for his wife, stating that she was Pauline Suter.

Hector Patten may have emigrated in 1727, but the first record which we have of him is in Boston, where on May 19, 1733, Hector Pating and Margaret Shear were married. Soon afterward, but whether before or after the death of this second wife is uncertain, he left Boston and settled in Falmouth, Maine, in the south parish which was then called by its Indian name Purpoodock and where there was a large colony of his fellow Ulstermen of Scotch descent. Here he married Mary Armstrong, a widow, and on March 11, 1735/6, when he sold to Capt. Dominicus Jordan the north-east pew in the parish meeting-house he refers to her as "my now married wife."§

By 1738 Patten had moved his family to Biddeford where he purchased from Martin Jameson forty acres of land "eastward of Rogers garden" for £135 on December 15, 1739.|| He was then called "yeoman alias mason." An agreement laying out highways through this property in 1744 shows his neighbors to have been Jameson, Robert Means, Samuel Banks and Jeremiah Brown.¶

* Londonderry.

† An occupational name, a Scotch form of shoemaker.

‡ See the entire letter from JOHN⁴ PATTEN (*Robert, 3 John, 2 Hector*) to JOHN³ PATTEN (*Robert, 2 Matthew*) in the preface. Pages 86-87 in this volume.

§ York Deeds, 20: 12.

|| York Deeds, 10: 331.

¶ York Deeds, 23: 224.

Hector Patten's name appears on the Biddeford tax lists from 1738 to 1753 (always as Hector, not as Actor). In July, 1751, he was in court for not frequenting public worship, and, giving a satisfactory reason, was acquitted. He was, of course, a Presbyterian, and may have been, as his grandson said, an elder of that church in Ireland.

In 1749 his sons John and William left Biddeford and settled on the large farms which they purchased at Cathance Point, in the Pejepscot country, and in 1754 his third son Matthew bought a farm at North Yarmouth. In the following year Hector and Mary Patten disposed of their Rogers Garden homestead to Ebenezer Bran* and, according to tradition, joined Matthew Patten at North Yarmouth, later going with this son to the mouth of the Penobscot, where in township "No. 6," later called Surry, Hector Patten is said to have died in 1780.

Children:

2. i. JOHN, b. about 1717.
3. ii. WILLIAM.
4. iii. MATTHEW.
- iv. MARY; m. in Biddeford, int. Nov. 9, 1758, John Rae. They were at Flying Point, North Yarmouth, from 1766 to 1771 and their daughters Lydia and Susanna were baptized there. Their son Matthew was at Surry with his uncle Matthew Patten in 1790.

2. LIEUT. JOHN² PATTEN (*Hector*¹) was born in Ireland in 1717, according to family tradition. He was brought to America by his father and was living with him at Rogers Garden in Biddeford† when he married Mary Means, daughter of Robert and Jean (Armstrong) Means on June 19, 1742. His name appears on the Biddeford tax lists from 1746 to 1748.

In 1749, in partnership with his brother William, his brother-in-law Thomas Means and Gowen Fulton, he purchased from Dr. Belcher Noyes and William Skinner of Boston a tract of land in Bowdoinham known as Cathance Point, lying between Merry-meeting Bay and the Cathance River and containing six hundred and sixty-one acres.‡ The Patten brothers and Fulton settled on this property but Means, who had in the meantime gone to North Yarmouth, sold out his interest to William and John Patten in 1755.§ In 1756 John purchased from Samuel Tebbets of Topsham one-quarter of a mill on Cathance River and sixty-two acres of land adjoining it.|| The Cathance property was divided between

* York Deeds, 29: 292.

† Later Saco, now Old Orchard.

‡ York Deeds, 80: 10. Cathance Point became a part of Topsham in 1783, but was again transferred to Bowdoinham in 1820.

§ York Deeds, 26: 17.

|| York Deeds, 36: 16.

the Pattens and Fulton in 1759, a well-drawn map being recorded with the instrument of division.* Lincoln deeds record his purchase of over eight hundred acres in Topsham and Bowdoinham between 1760 and 1785, of which he sold but little.

John Patten was a blacksmith and farmer. He was a lieutenant in Capt. Adam Hunter's company of militia, being so set down in the "alarm list" of 1757. He was selectman of Bowdoinham in 1765, 1766, 1769, 1770 and 1771.

In addition to his trade John Patten built the first ship constructed at Cathance, the *Merrymeeting*, a sloop of ninety tons, and the forerunner of a long series. His partners in this venture were John Fulton and Robert Hunter, and his brother Capt. William Patten was the sloop's master. Later he built the *Defiance* and in 1772 the *Industry*, owned by himself, his son Robert and his sons-in-law Fulton, Jameson and Harwood, and captained by his son-in-law Maxwell. The *Industry* made the first voyage from Bowdoinham to the West Indies.

Lieut. Patten died April 7, 1795, from injuries received in falling from his horse, and on his tombstone appears the following inscription: "Sacred to the memory of Mr. John Patten, a Deacon of the Congregational Church in Topsham, a valuable member of civil and religious society, and an affectionate husband and parent. Dyed April ye 7th, 1795. Blessed are ye dead, who die in ye Lord." A long account of his character, written in the pious language of the times, was composed by his son Robert in 1863.†

* York Deeds, 36: 21.

† He was an honest and industrious man, upright in all the walks and relations of life. He was a farmer and had also the trade of blacksmith, and had a shop on the farm where he employed a portion of his time, and performed the blacksmith work of the vicinity. Besides the business of the farm and shop he was somewhat engaged in ship building and navigation. By industry and attention to business he accumulated considerable property and was one of the most influential and useful members of society in his day. By his example and influence vice was rebuked and virtue and good order encouraged and promoted. He was a man of good appearance. Those who retain a recollection of him testify to his manly form and bearing. They unite also in saying that he was tall and well proportioned, of commanding presence, active and quick in his movements, kind and affectionate to his family, and to all within the circle of his acquaintance. He was not without some share of family pride and hence might appear at times severe in his reproofs of connections who might occasionally wander from the paths of propriety and good behavior. He reared a large and respectable family, "bringing them up in the way they should go" and like Abraham, "commanding his children and his household after him."

He was religious from his youth, having always enjoyed the example and instruction of a pious father, and at the time of his death was a deacon of the Congregational Church in Topsham. As a Christian, he was exemplary, evincing the sincerity and reality of his religion by his daily walk and conversation. He was faithful in the performance of the duties pertaining to the relations of social and religious life. His family was the scene of domestic peace and order, where the worship of God was regularly maintained. He was a strict observer of the Sabbath, and a constant attendant upon the services of the day, although residing some miles from the place of public worship. On Sabbath evenings the children of the family were called together and catechised according to the good old puritan custom. While his religion shone as a light to others, to himself it was a source of constant comfort and support through life, and of hope in his death.

Administration on his estate was granted to his son David on April 17, 1795, at the written request of his widow Mary and sons Robert, Thomas, Joseph and Actor. John Fulton and John Reed of Topsham acted as David Patten's sureties. The inventory of the estate amounted to £2004. Widow Mary Patten died October 5, 1800, aged seventy-seven.

Children:*

5. i. ROBERT, b. May 14, 1743, in Biddeford.
- ii. SARAH, b. March 27, 1743, in Biddeford; m. Robert Fulton, in Topsham (certificate issued Nov. 23, 1764).
- iii. JEAN, b. Sept. 13, 1747; m. William Randall, in Topsham (certificate issued Aug. 21, 1783); d. (Jane) Nov. 16, 1833, in Topsham.
- iv. MARY, b. June 17, 1749; m. Samuel Jamison; d. April 2, 1795, aged 46.
- v. HANNAH, b. March 25, 1751; m. in Brunswick June 12, 1775, Capt. Thomas Harwood of Brunswick; d. Sept. 16, 1848.
- vi. MARGARET, b. March 18, 1753; m. Nov. 27, 1777, Capt. James Maxwell, in Topsham; d. Jan. 26, 1831.
- vii. JOHN, b. Dec. 12, 1754. While cutting hay in the Sheepscot River marshes in July, 1779, he, his brother William and his brothers-in-law Robert Fulton and Thomas Harwood were captured by a landing party from a British cruiser. He managed to escape and d. in Topsham Feb. 5, 1780, *s.p.*
- viii. WILLIAM, b. June 24, 1757; d. in an English prison after his capture in 1779, *s.p.*
- ix. DOBCAS, b. April 24, 1759; m. James Hunter, Jr., July 30, 1784, in Topsham; d. April 12, 1813, aged 55.
6. x. THOMAS, b. Feb. 10, 1761.
7. xi. JOSEPH, b. March 17, 1763.
- xii. MATTHEW, b. Dec. 25, 1765; d. in Topsham Dec. 21, 1775.
8. xiii. ACTOR, b. Jan. 15, 1767.
9. xiv. DAVID, b. Oct. 24, 1769.

3. CAPT. WILLIAM² PATTEN (*Hector*¹) married Eleanor McFarland, daughter of James McFarland of Brunswick, the intention being recorded in Biddeford in August, 1749. She was living in 1769,[†] and the date of her death is not recorded. Capt. Patten's second wife, Hannah ———, survived him.[‡]

The year of his first marriage marks his removal to Bowdoinham, where, as has been stated in the account of his brother John, he bought a large tract of land at Cathance Point. Later purchases included one-eighth of a water-power and saw-mill on Cathance stream from Stephen Gatchell in 1757, Lot 46 at Topsham from Belcher Noyes in 1761, George Island of about fourteen acres in the narrows of the Androscoggin River from John Minot

* The date given for marriage of members of the family living in Topsham is after the date of the return of the marriage certificate.

[†] Lincoln Deeds, 9: 27.

[‡] As his administratrix, one of her bondsmen was David Fowler of Vassalboro, who very probably was related to her and whose name may afford a clue to her own surname.

of Boston in 1761, and one hundred acres on the Kennebec River at Bowdoinham from William Wyman in 1769.*

In 1761 and 1762 Margaret McFarland of Brunswick, James McFarland of Bowdoinham, Sarah McFarland, Robert McFarland of Cathance and Charles Proctor, Esq., and wife Margaret (McFarland) of Halifax, Nova Scotia, gave powers of attorney to William Patten to dispose of the lands of his father-in-law James McFarland.†

Capt. Patten was principally engaged in the coasting trade and was also his brother John's partner in ship-building. The *Merrymeeting*, launched in 1768, was under his command. He was a selectman of Bowdoinham in 1773.

Patten died in 1780, and his widow Hannah was appointed administratrix on June 1, her bondsmen being her brother-in-law, John Patten, and David Fowler of Vassalboro. Her appraisal was presented August 19, 1780. The homestead, with house and barn was valued at £133, another house and barn at £30, one hundred and three acres lying between Lieut. John Patten and Samuel Jameson at £146 and the seventy-four acre lot and island at Topsham narrows at £46. There was an immense quantity of personal property, including £74 in notes of hand, £5: 16: 0 in pewter, a Bible, a prayer-book and eight other volumes, a desk worth 48s., a Delft bowl, silver spoons and 610 paper dollars. "This estate is valued in silver money the old way allowing Spanish milled dollars at 6 shillings." The widow's dower was set off March 1, and she presented her account March 21, 1782. The doctor's bill was £4: 10: 0 and that for nursing £2: 1: 3. The real estate, other than the widow's dower, was appraised again January 15, 1784, and ordered settled on the son Matthew, he to pay the other heirs, or their representatives or guardians, as follows: to the eldest son James, £77; to John (deceased), William, Robert, Charles and Sarah, £38 each. Hannah Patten had been appointed guardian of Sarah (under fourteen years old) who was undoubtedly her own daughter, September 15, 1783. Robert, over fourteen, chose his brother Matthew his guardian on March 23, 1782, and Matthew was appointed guardian of Charles, under fourteen, on the same day.

Widow Hannah Patten of Bowdoinham quitclaimed her dower in her husband's estate to James Samson March 29, 1785.‡ No further record of her is found. She possibly remarried and left Bowdoinham.

* York Deeds, 36: 18; Lincoln Deeds, 3: 4; 3: 48; 11: 33.

† Cumberland Deeds, 4: 110, 111, 114.

‡ Lincoln Deeds, 19: 118.

In 1833 John Patten, their cousin and neighbor, said that this family was extinct in the male line. Of the six sons, only one married, in so far as records disclose, and he had only one son.*

Children, the first four certainly, and probably all six sons, by his first wife:

- i. JAMES, b. about 1750. His name appears as a private in the muster roll of Col. Edward Wigglesworth's regiment Jan. 15, 1777, but his enlistment, for the duration of the war, is dated Feb. 15, 1777. He was with this regiment at Valley Forge and Camp Greenage in 1778 and at Providence in the spring of 1779, but in June, 1779, he was reported "deserted." If he went to Topsham, he was at home at the time of his father's death and rejoined the army immediately thereafter as he had "returned to duty" on June 8, 1780. During the entire year 1781 he was in Lieut. Col. Calvin Smith's 6th Massachusetts regiment, and in a list dated at West Point Jan. 29, 1781, he is described as follows: age 30, stature 5 feet 10 inches, complexion light, hair light, eyes light, residence Topsham. At Brunswick, on Aug. 9, 1784, he signed an order, payable to Samuel Armstrong, on Capt. Howard, agent of the 6th Massachusetts regiment. On July 28, 1783, he sold to his brother Matthew all his interest in their father's real estate.† His death in the West Indies, aged about fifty, was recorded at Topsham between January and June, 1800, presumably *s.p.*‡
- ii. MATTHEW.
- iii. JOHN. Possibly he was the John Patten of Bowdoinham enlisted for the town and mustered as a private in Capt. Nathan Watkins' company, Col. Samuel Brewer's regiment, the return being made in response to an order of Dec. 26, 1777, but Patten and others never joining the company, they were listed as deserters. Surely died *s.p.* between 1780 and 1784.
- iv. WILLIAM, b. 1756. He enlisted in the army Nov. 16, 1776, for the duration of the war. As a private in Capt. Nicholas Blasdel's company, Col. Wigglesworth's regiment, he received travel allowance from Albany to Topsham, 380 miles, the warrant being allowed Jan. 27, 1777. He must have had short leave as his first pay account in Col. John Groaton's regiment begins Jan. 1, 1777, the last ending Dec. 31, 1780. In a list dated West Point, Jan. 25, 1781, he is described: age 25, stature 5 feet 10 inches, complexion and hair light, eyes gray, residence Topsham. He sold all his interest in his father's estate to Jonathan Whitney of Topsham Dec. 13, 1783.

* A Capt. William Patten, Jr., of Topsham, whose estate was settled 1813-1816, may have been a member of this family. Administration on the estate of William Patten, mariner, late of Topsham, was granted to Daniel Allen of Bowdoin February 27, 1812. The only property listed in the inventory was four notes, one from Capt. David Patten for \$80, dated August 20, 1811, and three from Moses Carleton and Joseph T. Wood in a total of \$402. Capt. William Patten, Jr., had drawn a bill on Moses Carleton, Jr., when in the West Indies. The administrator sued Capt. David Patten. In his account, dated February 27, 1813, Allen credits himself for "one day at Topsham in getting evidences of William Patten's age" and "two days at Bowdoinham in getting a bond for bringing up William Patten." There was a small balance left after administration expenses, and among the filed papers is the draft of a document, dated 1816, stating that \$98.12 of Daniel Allen's estate escheated to the Commonwealth of Massachusetts, there being no widow or kindred. It would seem that whoever wrote this paper substituted the name of the administrator for that of the deceased in error. As it would be impossible for any legitimate Patten of Topsham or Bowdoinham to die in 1813 leaving no kindred to inherit from him, it is very probable that Capt. William was illegitimate, the common law holding that only his wife or his own legitimate issue could inherit from a bastard, even his mother being barred. (Lincoln Probate, 16: 45; 17: 103, 190; 19: 44, and filed papers.)

† Lincoln Deeds, 16: 264.

‡ Church records of Rev. Jonathan Ellis.

Whitney apparently conveyed it to Samuel Thompson who sold it to Matthew Patten.* No further record. Presumably *d. s.p.*

- v. ROBERT, a minor in 1780. He was most probably the Robert Patten, Jr.,† late of Topsham, now of Portland, laborer, who was found guilty of forgery in Portland and sentenced to stand one hour in the pillory and pay costs. The forged note for £60 was dated April 1, 1791, purported to be signed by John Dunlap, and Patten used the *alias* "Burden Thornton" in attempting to collect it.‡ One Robert Patten m. Polly Veazie in Portland July 6, 1792.
- vi. CHARLES, b. 1771; drowned on the passage from the West Indies, Feb., 1793, aged 22, *s.p.*§
- vii. SARAH, a minor in 1780. On Feb. 20, 1784, her mother as guardian gave her brother Matthew a receipt for £38; 14; 0 in full payment for her share of her father's real estate.||

4. LIEUT-COL. MATTHEW² PATTEN (*Hector*¹) was born about the year 1732. He was first taxed with his father in Biddeford in 1753. He married Susanna Dunning, daughter of James and Martha (Lithgow) Dunning of Brunswick, both of Ulster families, their intention being recorded in Biddeford October 20, 1754.

In 1757 they moved to North Yarmouth where he purchased from Jeremiah Powell for £130 one hundred acres in "Dummer's claim," at Flying Point, next to land owned by the Means family, his father's neighbors in Biddeford, and near Maquoit Bay.¶ He remained in North Yarmouth until about 1768, when he went to township No. 6, later named Surry, at the mouth of the Penobscot River, and purchased a large farm. Stephen Hutchinson sold him two shares in township No. 1, each share containing three hundred and seventy acres, together with a farm, house and improvements at Oak Point and Hutchinson's Island in 1768, and from Stephen Hutchinson, Jr., he bought one hundred and fifty additional acres at Oak Point in 1770. In 1769 Elijah Richardson sold him one hundred acres more in No. 1. In 1770 he bought one hundred and fifty acres at Carrying Place Neck from John Webber and one hundred acres at Burnt Point, Newbury Neck, from William Kinch, both lots being in No. 6. In 1772 he bought from William Hazen and Leonard Jarvis of Newburyport five proprietor's rights in No. 6, and when he mortgaged them to Jarvis, then of Boston, in 1785, it was stated that Robert Patten of Boston (Matthew's cousin) was to be allowed to discharge the mortgage, he having bought the rights with Matthew.**

* Lincoln Deeds, 10: 233, 269.

† ROBERT (*John, Hector*) being Sr.

‡ Supreme Judicial Court of Mass., No. 140181, 140187.

§ Church records of Rev. Jonathan Ellis.

|| Lincoln Deeds, 16: 364.

¶ York Deeds, 33: 247.

** Lincoln Deeds, 3: 112, 113; 10: 259; Hancock Deeds, 3: 480.

In 1771, called Capt. Patten, he gave a power of attorney to his brother-in-law Mr. Robert Dunning of Brunswick and Mr. Thomas Campbell of North Yarmouth under which they quit-claimed Susannah Patten's right in her mother's dower in James Dunning's estate to her brother Andrew Dunning.* In 1774 he sold to Andrew Flood one hundred acres in No. 6 (the cow pasture and West Brook meadows) which he had mowed five or six years. He was a trader, plying up and down the coast in his vessel and visiting the small and remote settlements. No. 6, before its incorporation, was often called Pattensborough in the land records, and Patten Bay, Patten Point and Patten Ponds in Surry still bear his name.

On January 30, 1776, Matthew Patten was chosen Lieut.-Colonel of the Fifth Lincolnshire Regiment of Massachusetts militia and his appointment was confirmed by the council on February 8th. Col. Patten was chosen to go to Topsham to secure Rev. Mr. Urquhart, a Presbyterian minister, to preach at Surry in 1785.

He sold his North Yarmouth farm to William Rogers of Brunswick in 1778, his wife Susanna releasing dower and his brother-in-law John Rae witnessing the deed.†

Col. Patten died before the census of 1790 was taken, as his widow was then recorded as head of the family. She was administering his estate in 1791, entering an inventory showing large land-holdings in Surry. There was one lot of land on Newbury Neck containing one hundred acres (£17: 10: 0), a lot at the head of Patten's Bay (£15) and a lot on the south side of the bay (£15). Among the personal belongings were a silver watch, a case of nine bottles and many books. He owed his sons John and James £171 and £73 respectively, and their mother conveyed land to them in 1795. His gravestone cost 42 shillings.

In the account book of Donald Ross of Union River (Ellsworth) for the year 1793 appear the names of Widow Patten, Col. James Patten, Robert Patten and a joint account of "John Patten and Bob."

Widow Susanna Patten spent the last years of her life with her sons James and Robert in Stetson, where she died August 30, 1810, aged seventy-four years, five months.

* Cumberland Deeds, 45: 489.

† Cumberland Deeds, 10: 369.

Children:

11. i. JAMES, b. in 1756, probably in Saco.
- ii. SARAH, b. Nov. 5, 175-, in North Yarmouth.
- iii. JANE, b. Feb. 24, 175-, in North Yarmouth; d. young.
12. iv. JOHN, bapt. April 29, 1763.
- v. SUSANNA, bapt. Feb. 7, 1767, in North Yarmouth.
- vi. MARY, bapt. at Union River (Ellsworth) Oct. 7, 1772, by Rev. John Murray of Boothbay.
13. vii. ROBERT, bapt. Oct. 7, 1772, with his sister Mary.
- viii. JANE, b. Dec. 24, 1774; m. James McFarland of Trenton to whom Susanna Patten conveyed one hundred acres in Surry on Sept. 22, 1795, presumably as a wedding gift, Jean Patten being a witness;* d. Feb. 21, 1832.

5. CAPT. ROBERT³ PATTEN (*John*,² *Hector*¹) was born in Biddeford May 14, 1743. When he was six years old his father moved to Bowdoinham, where, after his marriage to Margaret Hunter of Topsham on December 19, 1768, Robert settled on a farm at the end of Cathance Neck, known as Patten's Point, his father deeding him one hundred and forty acres of his original purchase in 1776.†

Robert Patten was a builder and commander of ships. In his yard at Patten's Point the following twelve vessels were launched, and of them he acted as captain of the *Peggy*, the *Minerva*, the *Topsham* and the *Venus*.

1783	schooner	<i>Industry</i>	94 tons
1785	sloop	<i>Friendship</i>	89 tons
1795	schooner	<i>Peggy</i>	100 tons
1796	schooner	<i>Orange</i>	119 tons
1797	brig	<i>Minerva</i>	128 tons
1799	schooner	<i>Susanna</i>	93 tons
1800	brig	<i>Topsham</i>	99 tons
1800	schooner	<i>Lark</i>	108 tons
1802	schooner	<i>Mercury</i>	105 tons
1804	schooner	<i>Venus</i>	106 tons
1805	sloop	<i>Lucinda</i>	81 tons
1811	brig	<i>Comet</i>	187 tons

He was a selectman of Bowdoinham in 1779, 1780, 1782, 1783 and 1784.

From a memoir written by his son John come the following quotations: "Besides the management of the farm, he built during his lifetime a number of vessels, and was always more or less engaged in navigation. In his business concerns and in his endeavors to accumulate property it seems that Providence did

* Hancock Deeds, 3: 502.

† Lincoln Deeds, 12: 10.

not always favor him, for, while he met with much success, he also met with many losses. He was interested in six vessels which were lost during his business life. Of one of these he was sole owner; of others part owner only. Twice he suffered the loss of his dwelling house by fire. Yet notwithstanding these serious checks to his prosperity he succeeded in maintaining himself through life in good circumstances as to property, and died possessed of a considerable estate. The first chaise introduced and used in Topsham was owned by him. A few weeks of schooling were all that he enjoyed when he was young. Yet, by his own occupation, and what aid he might receive from members of the family, he acquired a decent education for that day. When about the age of thirty he was chosen Captain of the militia company by his fellow citizens. His commission was from the King's Council of Massachusetts Bay and was dated June 2nd, 1776, before the declaration of our national independence. He was about medium size and stature, of light complexion, having blue eyes and brown hair."

Capt. Patten's recollections provided the material for his son John's letter of 1830, dealing with the family origins. Margaret (Hunter) Patten died June 25, 1831, aged eighty-four. Capt. Patten died March 14, 1841, aged ninety-seven.

His will, dated December 9, 1837, was proved August 23, 1841, and names his son John executor. To William Hunter, husband of my eldest daughter Mary Hunter, deceased, two-fifths of the home place of John Hunter, deceased, provided he pay to his son Robert Hunter \$50. and to his daughter Nancy Whitney \$50. To James H. Peterson, Cordis Butterfield, Robert P. Butterfield, Harriet, Louisa and Margaret Butterfield, children of my second daughter Jane Butterfield. To my third daughter Susanna Rogers and her husband John Rogers. To my youngest daughter Margaret Adams and her husband Francis Adams. To Sally Patten, widow of my eldest son William Patten, and to her children Alfred Patten, Robert Patten and Margaret Young. To my second son Adam Patten. To my youngest son John Patten.*

Children, born in Topsham:

- i. MARY, b. Sept. 27, 1768; m. May 24, 1787, Capt. William Hunter.
- ii. JANE, b. June 6, 1772; m. (1) March 21, 1799, Capt. James Peterson of Bath; m. (2) Feb. 11, 1806, Capt. Abraham Butterfield of Charlestown and Machias.
- iii. SUSAN, b. May 15, 1774; m. Aug. 29, 1799, Capt. John Rogers, Jr.
- iv. CAPT. WILLIAM, b. Feb. 16, 1776; m. in Bath Feb. 6, 1800, Sally (Winchell) Fulton, widow of Capt. John Fulton, who d. Aug. 5, 1868; he d. April 27, 1821, aged 45. His widow, Sarah Patten, was

* Lincoln Probate, 50: 184.

appointed administratrix of his estate May 9, 1821.* He had been captain of his father's sloop *Susanna* in 1799 and his brig *Comet* in 1811 and owned and commanded the schooner *Margaret*, 120 tons, in 1816. The brig *America*, 135 tons, owned by Peleg Tallman, was under command of a Capt. William Patten in 1807, but there is a possibility that this was Capt. William Patten, Jr. (See note on p. 18.) (Page 102 in this volume.)

Children:

1. *Capt. Alfred*; m. Maria —; drowned Jan. 25, 1847, while in command of the bark *Dudley*, 247 tons, owned by William Purrington of Bowdoinham. He was survived by his widow, Maria R. Patten, and two minor children, Cornelia Gray Patten (b. May 12, 1836, in Bowdoinham) and Alfred P. Patten (b. Nov. 11, 1838, in Bowdoinham). William Purrington was named to administer his estate Aug. 16, 1847.†
 2. *Capt. Robert*, b. July 14, 1812; m. at Bowdoinham Nov. 30, 1837, Beulah Foster Purrington who d. in Denver, Colorado, June 27, 1889; d. July 20, 1855; 6 children recorded in Brunswick. In 1845 he was in command of William Purrington's ship *Robert Patten*, 376 tons, and in 1849 of Purrington's ship *Marathon*, 485 tons, and was possibly that Capt. Robert Patten who commanded the ship *Civilian*, built at Richmond and owned by H. Springer of Hallowell, in 1854.
 3. *William*; d. before 1837, when his grandfather made his will.
 4. *Margaret*; m. Levi Young before 1837.
- v. **ADAM**, b. May 7, 1779; m. July 27, 1806, Hannah Small who d. Dec. 4, 1850, aged 71 years, 2 months; he d. Jan. 8 or 9, 1856. He was a farmer in Bowdoinham and also kept the tavern known as "The Bunch of Grapes," the sign of which, brought from Boston and carved from hardwood in three dimensions, is still in existence.

Children, born in Bowdoinham:

1. *Gilbert*, b. June 28, 1807; d. Aug. 12, 1812.
2. *Henry*, b. July 24, 1808; d. March 21, 1848.
3. *Mary L.*, b. April 16, d. April 26, 1810.
4. *Robert*, b. April 24, 1811; d. April 5, 1812.
5. *Adelaide*, b. Jan. 17, 1813; d. April 11, 1814.
6. *Lucy Ann*, b. April 20, 1815; m., int. April, 1856, Harvey Haley of Topsham.
7. *Francis S.*, b. Feb. 16, 1817; m., int. Nov. 1, 1845, Julia Ann Bradford of Poland; ship carpenter; d. in Bath March 2, 1898. His widow d. April 22, 1901. Their son Horatio O. Patten d. in Bath Nov. 14, 1915.
8. *Capt. Horatio A.*, b. Sept. 23, 1818; m. Alvicia Small who d. Feb. 13, 1879, aged 58; he d. in Brunswick Feb. 26, 1884. They adopted a daughter, Mary Emma Springer, b. Sept. 20, 1850, d. Oct. 21, 1882, in Brunswick.
9. *John Wesley*, b. Oct. 24, 1820; m., int. March 8, 1848, Sarah Eliza Reed of Poland; d. Feb. 25, 1888. He lived on the farm of his great-grandfather, John Patten. Their children were: Annie Eliza (b. Sept. 19, 1849; m. Alvah James Hildreth July 2, 1874), James Frederic (b. Nov.

* Lincoln Probate, 21: 247.

† Lincoln Probate, 53: 317; 55: 211; 59: 122; 61: 249.

- 24, 1851; m. Fannie A. Douglass May 27, 1880), Mary Adelaide (b. Dec. 27, 1855; d. May 11, 1864), Helen Maria (b. Oct. 24, 1858; m. John W. Barrett), Sarah Louise (b. July 20, 1860; m. Frank Herrick April 24, 1900) and Lilla Mabel, b. Nov. 1, 1867.
10. *Alexander*, b. June 16, 1823; d. March 17, 1843, at Liverpool, England.
- vi. **ROBERT**, b. July 22, 1780; d. July 17, 1801.
- vii. **MARGARET**, b. Aug. 6, 1781; m. July 20, 1802, Francis Adams of Charlestown and Brunswick.
- viii. **JOHN**, b. Oct. 4, 1785; m. Kezia Adams who d., his widow, April 12, 1878; he d. Aug. 28, 1865. He graduated from Bowdoin College, A.B., in the class of 1808 and obtained his A.M. in 1811. From 1809 to 1811 he studied in the Andover Theological Seminary but did not enter the ministry. After teaching school in North Carolina he entered some mercantile business in Charlestown, finally returning in 1824 to Bowdoinham where he was a farmer and shopkeeper. He served the town in the Maine Legislature in 1832 and 1844-1845. His will was made May 20, 1863. To my son Bardwell Patten, the homestead farm. To son John Lyman Patten. To wife Kezia Patten. To sons Robert Francis and Jarvis Patten. Executor: son Bardwell. The inventory contained a library of Greek and Latin works.*

Children, recorded in Bowdoinham:

1. *Robert Francis*, b. Oct. 12, 1819; m. Phebe Birdsall; a lawyer in Abbeville, La.; d. Oct. 19, 1867.
2. *Capt. Bardwell*, b. Jan. 9, 1821; m. Oct. 21, 1851, Frances J. Meserve; d. June 28, 1890. He commanded the bark *Penang* for J. Patten & Sons of Bath in 1864. Their children were Charlotte Keziah (b. Oct. 15, 1852; d. March 17, 1858), Mary Caverly (b. March 21, 1858), Robert Everett (b. March 4, 1861; m. Oct. 2, 1895, Helen (Sampson) Leavitt), Rev. Arthur Bardwell (b. March 26, 1864; m. Oct. 1, 1896, Kate Howes Ryder).
3. *William Sidney*, b. Nov. 17, 1824; d. June 6, 1845.
4. *Capt. Jarvis*, b. June 13, 1827; m. Charlotte E. Whitmore Oct. 1, 1851; d. May 16, 1888. He commanded ships of the fleet of his Bath cousin George Fulton Patten, having the *Transit* in 1860, the *Italia* in 1863 and the steamship *Idaho* in 1866. He was interested in his family history and while in London consulted the College of Arms about the possible English origin of the Pattens, with what, according to modern standards, were very indefinite results. Their children were Francis Jarvis (b. Nov. 21, 1852; West Point, 1877; m. Oct. 29, 1884, Hattie Bessey), Hortense Charlotte (b. June 3, 1855; m. March 13, 1879, Lieut. John Herbert Philbrick), Anna Baker (b. 1858), Lizzie Barker (d. May 31, 1862), Katherine Kezia (b. March 15, 1864), Gertrude Camilla (d. Jan. 28, 1876), Goldwin Smith and Victoria Mansur (d. Sept. 9, 1874).
5. *John Lyman*, b. March 21, 1829; m. (1) Oct. 11, 1862, Elizabeth W. Purrington; m. (2) July 23, 1874, Sarah R. Hall; d. March 17, 1897. His children: William Sydney, 1864-1866; Wilbur Cyrus; Lena; Thomas Osborne, 1875-1878; Lottie Gertrude, 1876-1877; John Gray (b. Nov. 19, 1882; Bates College, 1906).

* Sagadahoc Probate.

6. CAPT. THOMAS³ PATTEN (*John,*² *Hector*¹) was born in Topsham February 10, 1761. He married March 1, 1787, Katherine Fulton, who died June 1, 1816, aged fifty. His second wife, whom he married April 30, 1822, was widow Jane Pattec, who died May 4, 1860, at Upper Stillwater, aged ninety-one years, two months. Capt. Patten died in Topsham May 20, 1841, aged eighty.

When he was twenty-two, he commanded the sloop *Industry*, 93 tons, built and owned by his father and his brother Robert, and named for the schooner which they had sold during the Revolution. In 1796 he was owner and captain of the schooner *Orange*, 119 tons, which was later captured by a French privateer, and in 1800 he commanded the schooner *Lark*, 108 tons.

There is no record of probate of his estate until April, 1885, when his grandson, Charles E. Patten, was appointed to administer the money which was paid, as a French spoliation claim, to cover the loss by capture of the *Orange*. Division was made, by representation, between three grandchildren, fifteen great-grandchildren and eight great-great-grandchildren.

Children, born in Topsham:

- i. CAPT. GEORGE FERGUSON,* b. Sept. 18, 1787; m. Feb. 5, 1820, Hannah Thomas of Bath, who d. Feb. 20, 1862; he d. Sept. 29, 1869.

His early life was spent in Topsham where he was a builder of small boats and captain of militia, seeing local service in the War of 1812, when British men-of-war were off the mouth of the Kennebec. In 1819 he built his first large craft, the brig *Statira*, 183 tons, and in 1820 he established in Bath the ship-yard which was to make a fortune for himself and his family. Between 1821 and 1865 he built and owned the following vessels:

1821	brig <i>Jasper</i> , 222 tons, John Patten, captain
1825	brig <i>George</i> , 251 tons, John Patten, captain
1828	ship <i>Champion</i> , 377 tons, E. Kellerau, captain
1832	ship <i>Andes</i> , 444 tons, E. Kellerau, captain
1833	ship <i>Palestine</i> , 469 tons, A. N. Littlefield, captain
1838	ship <i>London</i> , 697 tons, James F. Patten, captain
1840	ship <i>Trenton</i> , 667 tons, Noble Maxwell, captain bark <i>Florence</i> , 349 tons, William Decker, Jr., captain
1848	ship <i>George F. Patten</i> , 778 tons, E. P. Stinson, captain
1863	ship <i>Italia</i> , 1019 tons, Jarvis Patten, captain
1865	steamship <i>Montana</i> , 1008 tons, J. R. Kelley, captain

In 1833 he took his brother John into partnership and the following are registered under the ownership of the firm of G. F. & J. Patten:

1833	schooner <i>Ares</i> , 129 tons, William Decker, Jr., captain
1846	brig <i>Fawn</i> , 160 tons, William H. Duncan, captain
1849	ship <i>Falcon</i> , 813 tons, John P. Smith, captain
1851	ship <i>Mobile</i> , 960 tons, Joseph H. Tarbox, captain ship <i>Champlain</i> , 513 tons, Seth Woodward, captain

* *Ferguson* in Topsham records, *Fulton* in Bowdoin College Catalogue. His maternal grandmother was a Ferguson.

- 1852 ship *Marshfield*, 999 tons, Joseph H. Torrey, captain
 ship *Ariel*, 1329 tons, J. Q. A. Reed, captain
 1853 ship *Brittania*, 1000 tons, William Torrey, Jr., captain
 ship *Clara Brookman*, 1071 tons, A. G. Higgins, captain
 1854 ship *Assyria*, 1363 tons, Abner T. Wade, captain
 1855 ship *Caspian*, 924 tons, William H. Trufant, captain
 ship *John Patten*, 960 tons, G. E. H. Patten, captain
 1857 ship *James F. Patten*, 973 tons, E. T. Woodward, captain
 1858 ship *DeSoto*, 799 tons, Samuel G. Reed, captain
 1859 ship *Amity*, 798 tons, Abner T. Wade, captain
 ship *Canada*, 996 tons, L. Wyman, captain
 1860 ship *Transit*, 933 tons, Jarvis Patten, captain
 1866 steamship *Idaho*, 1073 tons, Jarvis Patten, captain
 1868 ship *Japan*, 1251 tons, S. P. Emmons, captain

Capt. Patten served in the Maine Legislature in 1838-1839 and 1864-1865. He was an overseer of Bowdoin College from 1842 until his death, and president of the Patten Library Association in Bath, of which he and his brother John were the chief benefactors, from 1847 until 1857. His will, dated January 1, 1869, left his large estate to his children and named James T. Patten of Bath and Eliphalet Whittlesey of Brunswick executors.

Children, born in Bath:

1. *Catherine Fulton*, b. Jan. 3, 1821; m. in Bath July 5, 1840, Maj. Wildes P. Walker of Boston.
 2. *George*, b. 1823; d. May 30, 1831.
 3. *Hannah Thomas*, b. Dec. 27, 1825; m. in Bath Oct. 1, 1844, Jarvis Slade.
 4. *Statira*, b. Feb. 17, 1826; m. Aug. 25, 1860, John S. Elliott.
 5. *James Thomas*, b. July 4, 1830; m. in Astoria, N. Y., Jan. 27, 1855, Isabel Smith; d. June 1, 1888, at Neyresville, N. C. Four sons: Henry Smith (b. Nov. 25, 1855; m. Oct. 4, 1880, Hattie Bostwick), Frederick Winthrop (b. Dec. 8, 1862; m. Nov. 7, 1900, Jane Armstrong Cox), Edward Clarence and James Merrill (b. July 6, 1867; m. Edith Harrod).
 6. *Paulina*, b. May 24, 1832; m. in Bath Aug. 15, 1855, Winthrop Tappan.
 7. *Ann Augusta*, b. Oct. 15, 1834; m. in Bath Oct. 31, 1854, Rev. Eliphalet Whittlesey.
 8. *George Maxwell*, b. Nov. 13, 1836; m. Frederica Camp; d. in Bath April 10, 1901; she d. in New York Jan. 31, 1908. Children: Capt. George H. (b. May 12, 1860), Hannah T. (b. June 2, 1862; m. Sept. 29, 1898, Dr. Percy Willard Roberts), Frederick Mortimer (b. May 12, 1864) and Katherine Fulton (b. July 14, 1876; d. Jan. 1, 1895).
- ii. CAPT. JOHN, b. Aug. 27, 1789; m. (1) Oct. 17, 1819, Betsey Bates of Boston who d. Aug. 6, 1826, aged 32; m. (2) in Bath March 26, 1830, Mary R. (Peterson) Turner, daughter of Capt. Levi Peterson and widow of Gen. Dwelly Turner; she d. April 3, 1862; d. Feb. 24, 1887, at the age of ninety-seven.

During the War of 1812 he was mate under his future father-in-law, Capt. Peterson, and is said to have been taken prisoner by the British five times. In 1816 he owned and commanded the brig *Ann Maria*, 153 tons, built in Topsham. By 1821 he had also been captain of his brother George's brigs *Statira* and *Jasper*. In 1824 he owned and was captain of the ship *Catherine*, 313 tons, and in

1826 of the ship *Andes*, 363 tons. In addition to the vessels which he built in Bath and owned in partnership with his brother (1833-1868), he is listed as owner of the following:

1829	ship <i>Majestic</i> , 389 tons, Noble Maxwell, captain
1830	ship <i>New Orleans</i> , 389 tons, David Patten, captain
1831	ship <i>Globe</i> , 418 tons, William Patten, captain
1834	ship <i>Caspian</i> , 529 tons, David Patten, captain
1835	ship <i>Manchester</i> , 570 tons, James Patten, captain
1838	ship <i>Delaware</i> , 661 tons, David Patten, captain
1840	ship <i>Monmouth</i> , 728 tons, Noble Maxwell, captain
1842	ship <i>Halcyon</i> , 797 tons, David Patten, captain
1843	ship <i>Louisiana</i> , 747 tons, T. R. Patten, captain
1844	ship <i>Maine</i> , 749 tons, A. N. Littlefield, captain
1846	ship <i>Italy</i> , 749 tons, John O. Baker, captain

In 1860 he formed a partnership with his sons, called John Patten & Sons, for ship-building, and the following are recorded as property of this firm:

1860	ship <i>Fawn</i> , 874 tons, R. P. Manson, captain
1862	ship <i>Hudson</i> , 999 tons, J. P. Potter, captain
1863	ship <i>Moravia</i> , 1045 tons, Charles E. Patten, captain
1864	bark <i>Parsee</i> , 558 tons, J. O. Baker, captain
1864	bark <i>Penang</i> , 583 tons, B. Patten, captain
1868	ship <i>India</i> , 1294 tons, Lincoln Patten, captain
1869	ship <i>Nimbus</i> , 1302 tons, J. R. Kelley, captain

Two ships were registered as owned by John and G. E. R. Patten:

1875	ship <i>Astoria</i> , 1394 tons, John R. Kelley, captain
1876	ship <i>Alameda</i> , 1474 tons, Henry R. Otis, captain

Capt. Patten was mayor of Bath in 1851-1852, represented the city in the Maine Legislature and was prominent in all banking, business and charitable activities. His estate was administered by his grandson John O. Patten and his grandson-in-law Richard Goodwin in 1887.*

Children, by first wife:

1. *Capt. Thomas Rogers*, b. in Boston May 3, 1821; m. in Pittston Sept. 29, 1844, Caroline E. Cooper; d. March 23, 1847, aged 26.
2. *Capt. Gilbert Elbridge Russell*, b. Feb. 28, 1823 in Boston; m. Nov. 24, 1859, Emma Maria Owen; d. in Bath Jan. 12, 1882. He was captain of his father's ship *Halcyon* when he was twenty-two, captain of the newly-launched ship *John Patten* in 1855, and his father's partner in

* There was another John Patten of Bath, a contemporary of Capt. John Patten, but of no known relationship to him.

JOHN PATTEN, born in Ireland about 1787, came to America and married Lucy Peterson of Duxbury. He was a painter by trade. While he may have been a relative of the Maine Pattens, his wife's connection with the Petersons of Bath was possibly the reason for his coming there from Duxbury about 1820. He died in Bath Oct. 26, 1859, aged 72 years, his widow, Lucy Patten, surviving until Dec. 8, 1853, aged 83 years.

Children:

- i. CATHERINE, b. in Duxbury March 15, 1805; m. Charles Lucciuni. Mrs. Catherine, wife of Mr. Charles Lucciuni and daughter of Mr. John Patten, died in Bath, aged 30 (*Christian Mirror*, May 6, 1825).
- ii. JOHN, b. in Duxbury Feb. 15, 1807; d. in Bath March 4, 1833, aged 26.
- iii. LUCY, b. in Duxbury Sept. 15, 1808.
- iv. MARY; d. in Bath Sept. 24, 1830, aged 19.
- v. ELEANOR F., b. in Duxbury in 1814; m. in Bath Feb. 7, 1839, Capt. William Torrey, Jr. (*Portland Transcript*, Feb. 16, 1839); d. in Bath Dec. 11, 1892, aged 78 years, eleven months, her death record giving the names and birth-places of her parents.

the ship-yard. Children: John Owen (b. April 20, 1861; d. April 19, 1890) and Clara (b. Jan. 6, 1864; m. Richard E. Goodwin; d. July 8, 1899).

By second wife:

3. *Mary Paulina*, b. Jan. 8, 1831; d. Aug. 16, 1896.
4. *John Levi*, b. Oct. 23, 1836; d. Dec. 22, 1860.
- iii. *MARY*, bapt. Aug. 2, 1792 (*Polly*, b. June 4, 1792, in Topsham town record); d. Aug. 27, 1792.
- iv. *ANNE F.*, b. July 13, 1793; m. Feb. 17, 1823, Rev. Adam Wilson of Wiscasset.
- v. *PAULINA*, b. April 13, 1796; m. Sept. 26, 1824, William Patten (*Actor, Robert*).
- vi. *ELIZA*, b. June 28, d. Aug. 10, 1798.
- vii. *CAPT. JAMES FULTON*, b. Sept. 24, 1800; m. Nov. 14, 1832, Sophia Ann (*Harding*) Young, who d. March 17, 1882; he d. in Bath Jan. 14, 1883. He commanded his brother George's *Andes* in 1832, his brother John's *Manchester* in 1835, George's *London* in 1838 and became a member of the family firm. His two sons administered his estate in 1883.

Children, born in Bath:

1. *Capt. Charles Edward*, b. Jan. 12, 1834; m. in London in 1857, Jessie Jones; d. in Bath June 15, 1903 *s.p.* He was captain of the newly-launched ship *Moravia* in 1863. His widow, who was born in Wrexham, Wales, in 1833, d. in Bath March 5, 1908.
2. *Frederick Harding*, b. May 13, 1838; m. April 26, 1883, Clara Allan Kendrick; d. in Bath July 23, 1889, *s.p.*; his widow d. in New York June 12, 1912.
3. *Emma Reed*, b. Aug. 19, 1843; d. unmarried, March 1, 1876.
- viii. *THOMAS*, b. Oct. 18, 1802; d. in infancy.
- ix. *MARY F.*, b. March 23, 1804; d. April 30, 1823, aged 19 (gravestone).
- x. *STATIRA*, b. 1806; d. July 1, 1828.
- xi. *THOMAS MEANS*, b. May 15, 1810; d. Dec. 6, 1816.

7. *JOSEPH³ PATTEN* (*John², Hector¹*) was born in Topsham March 17, 1763. He married Mary Fulton of Topsham July 7, 1789. He was a farmer on a tract of one hundred and sixty acres, which descended to his grandson, George Matthew Patten. On January 4, 1809, he was drowned, with his infant son, near Pleasant Point in Merrymeeting Bay. His widow, Mary Patten, died December 29, 1853, aged ninety-one.

Of his children, Hannah, Matthew, Rhoda and Sarah, minors over fourteen years of age, chose their mother their guardian on September 22, 1809. Jonathan Ellis was appointed guardian of Joseph, John Means, David Fulton and Margaret, minors under fourteen, on October 2, 1809.* David and Theodore chose their brother Matthew as guardian August 28, 1820.†

* Lincoln Probate, 18: 403-4.

† Lincoln Probate, 21: 628.

Children, born in Topsham:

- i. HANNAH, b. July 9, 1789; d. May 10, 1814, unmarried.
- ii. MATTHEW, b. Feb. 22, 1791; m. Nov. 30, 1837, Susanna (Rogers) Sumner, who d. Sept. 18, 1884, aged 81 years, 8 months; he d. Nov. 23, 1870, aged 79 years, 9 months. He saw service in the War of 1812 and served Topsham as selectman and representative to the Maine Legislature. He succeeded to the paternal farm. Susan Patten, his widow, was appointed administratrix of his estate in Feb., 1871. Her will, dated Sept. 13, 1884, names her grandson, Charles M. Patten, son of her son Noble, deceased, and her only surviving child, George M. Patten. Andrew Curtis of Bowdoinham was named executor.

Children:

1. *Noble Maxwell*, b. Feb. 26, 1841; m. in Topsham Oct. 18, 1871, Amelia Crane; d. Dec. 23, 1874, Humphrey P. Mallet being appointed administrator of his estate in March, 1875; one son, Charles Matthew, b. Sept. 18, 1878.
2. *George Matthew*, b. Oct. 23, 1843; m. in Topsham, int. April 23, 1867, Fannie Lawton Page; d. Aug. 9, 1919; four daughters.
- iii. RHODA, b. Feb. 9, 1793; m. June, 1828, Joshua Foy.
- iv. SARAH, b. May 20 or 22, 1795; d. Nov. 24, 1816, unmarried.
- v. JOSEPH, b. March 15, 1797; m. Dec. 27, 1830, Hannah (Winchell) Hunter, who d. Oct. 16, 1880, aged 82 (gravestone); he d. July 4, 1874, aged 77 (gravestone). He was a farmer and housewright in his native town. His widow's will, dated Nov. 2, 1872, named her granddaughter Alice M. Blake, her sisters Bethia Hunter and Sarah W. Hunter and appointed her brother-in-law Franklin W. Hunter executor.

Children, born in Topsham:

1. *Mary Ellen*, b. Oct. 4, 1831; m. Dec. 19, 1854, Daniel S. Blake.
2. *Arthur Hunter*, b. Sept. 27, 1833; d. Nov. 19, 1852.
- vi. JOHN MEANS, b. May 12, 1799; m. May 25, 1824, Charlotte Wing of Vassalboro; brought up by his aunt Katherine (Fulton) Owen at Phippsburg and became a boat-builder, living at Gardiner, Waldoboro and at Charlestown, Mass.; his wife d. Feb. 9, 1858, in Waldoboro; he d. at the home of his brother David at Topsham Aug. 30, 1875.

Children:

1. *David*, b. Feb. 5, 1825; d. at Staten Island, N. Y., 1898.
2. *Esther*, b. Sept. 11, 1826; d. at Waldoboro May 22, 1848.
3. *Nelson*, b. March 4, 1828; d. at Waldoboro April 9, 1853.
4. *Joseph*, b. March 24, 1830; m. (1) in Portland, Dec. 7, 1865, Sarah Elizabeth Fales; m. (2) in Woburn, Mass., Oct. 2, 1878, Isabel Moulton; d. at Taunton, Mass., May 13, 1895.
5. *Elvira*, b. Oct. 23, 1831; d. at Waldoboro June 28, 1847.
6. *Horace*, b. May 6, 1833; d. Sept. 7, 1836.
7. *Jason Otis*, b. Feb. 18, 1835; d. at Whistler, Alabama.
8. *Charlotte Jane*, b. Feb. 10, 1837; d. in 1862.

9. *Isaac Reed*, b. Jan. 1, 1840; m. Diana M. S. Johnson of Upton, Mass.; killed in the Battle of the Wilderness, May 6, 1864.
 10. *Verona*, b. March 15, 1843; d. March 18, 1868.
 11. *Emily Elena*, b. Feb. 18, 1846; d. April 24, 1848.
 12. *Albion*, b. June 17, 1848; d. Sept. 17, 1848.
 13. *Mary Ella*, b. Feb. 23, 1850; m. Sept. 3, 1872, Rev. George A. Crawford, of Waldoboro and Boston.
- vii. **DAVID FULTON**, b. June 8, 1801; m. (1) Jan. 1, 1829, Thankful Hopkins of Brunswick who d. Dec. 13, 1834; m. (2) Dec. 25, 1843, Rebecca Pike Dyer of Harpswell who d. Aug. 7, 1878, aged 56; d. March 29, 1882, aged 80.

Children, by first wife:

1. *Samuel Hopkins*, b. June 9, 1830, in Brunswick; d. June 26, 1880.
2. *Mary Elizabeth*, b. May 19, 1832; d. June 13, 1832.

By second wife:

3. *Melinda Ellen*, b. Jan. 8, 1845, in Harpswell; m. Oct. 30, 1883, Samuel Perkins Quint.
 4. *Andrew Weendon*, b. May 1, 1847; d. July 24, 1882, while mate of the ship *Florida*.
- viii. **DANIEL W.**, b. June 29, 1803; d. Mar. 31, 1835, unmarried.
- ix. **THEODORE**, b. Sept. 17, 1805; m. Oct. 9, 1831, Ruth Stinson who d. April 16, 1887, in Richmond; he d. in Richmond March 12, 1883. He was a blacksmith, living at one time or another in the river towns of Topsham, Brunswick, Gardiner, Hallowell and Richmond. Ruth Patten's will, dated Sept. 24, 1878, mentions her husband, her sons Albert and Stinson and her daughters Frances Tebbetts and Henrietta, the latter being named executrix.

Children:

1. *Albert George*, b. July 8, 1833; m. in Hallowell Oct. 16, 1859, Octavia White; d. March 18, 1883, in Chelsea, Mass.
 2. *Frances Caroline*, b. Dec. 22, 1834; m. Nov. 25, 1852, Ambrose J. Tebbetts.
 3. *David Stinson*, b. July 12, 1837; m. Sept. 28, 1870, Roxana Barton; d. Dec. 16, 1900.
 4. *Alice May*, b. Aug. 4, 1840; d. in Richmond May 13, 1865.
 5. *Henrietta Florella*, b. Dec. 4, 1850; m. May 1, 1864, Albert Bird Kidder of Richmond.
- x. **MARGARET**, b. Sept. 17, 1806; d. Feb. 29, 1828, unmarried.
- xi. **MAXWELL**, b. Jan. 10, 1807; d. March 21, 1809.
- xii. —, an infant son, drowned with his father, aged 2 months, 1 day, Jan. 4, 1809.

8. **ACTOR² PATTEN** (*John,² Hector¹*) was born in Topsham January 15, 1767. He married in Topsham February 4, 1796, Anna Hunter, who died August 11, 1853, aged seventy-nine. He died in Bowdoinham August 21, 1855, aged eighty-eight.

He was a farmer, living in Bowdoinham. In 1806 he owned the newly-launched brig *Mary*, 167 tons, commanded by Benjamin Snow.

Three of his children were baptized in the church at Dresden, 1801-1806, his name being twice entered in the records in its original form of *Hector*.

Children, recorded in Bowdoinham:

- i. PEGGY, b. Dec. 1, 1796; m. Dec. 18, 1822, Capt. John Fulton.
- ii. ALEXANDER LITHGOW, b. Jan. 5, 1799; d. July, 1824, unmarried.
- iii. FREEMAN PARKER, b. Jan. 28, 1801; m. (1) June 10, 1828, Mary Stone of Scarborough who d. April 10, 1844; m. (2) in Topsham June 23, 1845, Elizabeth Hildreth who d. Dec. 11, 1866, aged 65; he d. Nov. 13, 1882. He lived in Gardiner where he was engaged in the lumber business.

Children, by first wife, born in Gardiner:

1. *Actor*, b. Aug. 15, 1829; d. in Gardiner June 15, 1831.
2. *Mary Stone*, b. Aug. 28, 1831; m. Sept. 30, 1851, Augustus Hopkins.
3. *Huldah Stone*, b. Aug. 29, 1835; d. in Gardiner Jan. 15, 1865, unmarried.
4. *Freeman Parker*, b. Oct. 13, 1838; d. in infancy.

By second wife:

5. *Freeman*, b. June 4, 1846; m. Oct. 9, 1880, Susan B. Mitchell. After a successful business career in the west he returned to Gardiner and was mayor of the city 1899-1900.
- iv. NANCY, b. June 15, 1803; d. Nov. 16, 1839, unmarried.
- v. RUFUS, b. Nov. 15, 1805, in Dresden; m. April 2, 1835, Susan Merrill who d. June 10, 1890 (gravestone) or 1891 (*The Brunswick Telegraph*); he d. Oct. 15, 1896. He was a carpenter and builder, living in Phippsburg in 1850 and in Topsham in 1860.

Children, recorded in Topsham:

1. *Abel Merrill*, b. Sept. 19, 1836; d. at sea in Oct. 1862.
2. *Octavius Harding*, b. Feb. 3, 1837 (*sic*); d. at sea in Oct. 1862.
3. *Capt. Oscar*, b. April 3, 1839; m. Lillian (Maxwell) Harding.
4. *Adelia Mary* (twin), b. Jan. 29, 1842; m. Jan. 15, 1873, Capt. George L. White.
5. *Emma Mary* (twin), b. Jan. 29, 1842.
6. *Susan Mitchell*, b. May 14, 1845; m. Nov. 6, 1873, Jesse Franklin Snow of Brunswick.
7. *Sarah Fulton*, b. Aug. 22, 1848, in Arrowsic; m. Oct. 3, 1878, Humphrey Mallett.
8. *Henry Wilmot*, b. Sept. 24, 1850, in Arrowsic; m. Nov. 27, 1873, Fannie M. Quint.

- vi. CAPT. JOHN, b. Jan. 27, 1808; m. Dec. 28, 1837, Mary Purington who d. May 26, 1874; he d. in Quincy, Illinois, June 9, 1874. His wife is said to have made eleven voyages across the Atlantic with him before he retired from the sea and settled in Illinois in 1867.

Children, born in Bowdoinham :

1. *Capt. James Madison Winchell*, b. Jan. 17, 1839; m. Jan. 15, 1867, Sarah Gray Whittemore.
 2. *Nancy Louisa*, b. June 6, 1845; m. Sept. 1, 1866, Col. William Andrew Schmidt of Chicago.
- vii. ISAAC R. (twin), b. Aug. 6, 1810; d. April 29, 1849.
viii. JANE (twin), b. Aug. 6, 1810; m. Dec. 15, 1836, Joseph Merrill of Topsham.
ix. PENELOPE, b. Nov. 15, 1812; m. Dec. 23, 1831, Loring Stinson Fisher.
x. LOUISA, b. May 12, 1815; m. June 15, 1841, Moses Riggs; d. Jan. 7, 1877.
xi. ALBERT, b. Sept. 26, 1818; d. Jan. 30, 1820.

9. CAPT. DAVID⁸ PATTEN (*John*,² *Hector*¹) was born in Topsham October 24, 1769. He married December 26, 1793, Hannah Reed, Jr., who died in Topsham May 6, 1828, aged fifty-eight. He died in Topsham January 22, 1830, aged sixty.

Of his sea-faring life little is known except that he owned the brig *Minerva* of Topsham, 128 tons, John Fulton master, in 1797, and the sloop *Lucinda* of Topsham, 81 tons, James Todd master, in 1805.

Children, born in Topsham :

- i. MARY, b. Oct. 11, 1794; m. March 17, 1818, Capt. George Rogers; d. Jan. 16, 1821, in childbirth, in Topsham.
- ii. RACHEL, b. July 5, 1796; d. unmarried, March 8, 1858, aged 61.
- iii. CAPT. DAVID, b. Feb. 10, 1799; m. Sept. 23, 1834, Elizabeth L. Hunter; d. in Bath Jan. 23, 1871, aged 72; his widow d. in Brunswick March 12, 1882, aged 67. He moved from Topsham to Bath and followed the sea, the first recorded vessel under his command being the ship *New Orleans*, 380 tons, in 1830. In 1834 he was captain of the ship *Caspian*, 539 tons, in 1838 of the ship *Delaware*, 661 tons, and in 1842 of the ship *Halcyon*, 797 tons, all of the ships hailing from Bath and being owned by his cousin John Patten. In 1849 he owned the Bath ship *Tempest*, 861 tons, of which his brother Lincoln was master. Capt. David and Capt. Lincoln formed the partnership of D. & L. Patten by 1858, when they owned the ship *National*, 999 tons, Ozias Long, master. In 1864 they owned the bark *Sarepta*, 859 tons, commanded by David's young son, David A. Patten. Capt. David Patten's will was signed Jan. 7, 1868. He left his estate, valued at \$20,979, to his wife Elizabeth L. Patten, his son Horace Reed Patten and his daughters Mary Ellen Howard and Hannah Elizabeth Rogers, naming his brother Lincoln and son-in-law Roland B. Howard executors, but by a codicil his son-in-law Charles H. Rogers was substituted for Howard. The inventory shows that he owned $\frac{1}{8}$ of the ship *John Watt*, $\frac{1}{4}$ of the bark *Midas* and $\frac{3}{8}$ of the bark *Nippon*.

Children, recorded in Bowdoinham :

1. *Mary Ellen*, b. June 5, 1836; m. Rev. Roland B. Howard.
 2. *Capt. David Albert*, b. Feb. 18, 1839; captain of the bark *Sarepta* in 1864, when he was twenty-five, and d. at sea in 1865.
 3. *Hannah Elizabeth*, b. May 9, 1843; m. Charles H. Rogers of Portland.
 4. *Anna*, b. Dec. 31, 1844; d. Feb. 27, 1864.
 5. *Jane L.*, b. June 23, 1848; d. June 9, 1853.
 6. *Horace Reed*, b. 1854; d. Oct. 26, 1876.
- iv. **LUCINDA**, b. Aug. 15, 1801; m. July 14, 1823, Capt. George Rogers, widower of her sister Mary; d. Jan. 12, 1829, in Topsham.
- v. **CAPT. LINCOLN**, b. Dec. 12, 1808; m. (1) Nov. 30, 1840, Mary Storer; m. (2) June 30, 1851, Mary Elizabeth Whitney who d. in Bath May 24, 1866; m. (3) in Brunswick Oct. 10, 1872, Maria (Rogers) Tarbox; d. in Bath Nov. 23, 1900. He lived in Bath and followed the sea, being captain of his brother David's ship *Tempest* in 1849, of the ship *Roswell Sprague*, 815 tons, owned by Trufant & Drummond, in 1856 and of the ship *India*, owned by J. Patten & Sons, in 1868. His will, dated Nov. 24, 1879 (twenty years before his death), names his wife Maria Patten legatee and executrix, and directs that on her death the estate be divided between his two children Frank W. Patten and Mary S. Patten and his wife's daughter by a former marriage, Mary Tarbox, without distinction.

Children, by first wife:

1. *Edward Lincoln*, b. April 10, 1846; d. at Rangoon in 1864.
2. *David Clement*, b. Sept. 29, 1847; d. at Liverpool Feb. 28, 1865.

By second wife:

3. *Capt. Frank Whitney*, b. Sept. 15, 1855; m. June 18, 1894, Charlotte Shaw of Portland; d. in Newbury, Mass., Jan. 19, 1913.
4. *Mary Storer*, b. July 24, 1862; m. in Bath Oct. 14, 1885, William Bevier Mussenden.

10. MATTHEW³ PATTEN (*William*,² *Hector*¹) was born about the year 1752 in Topsham.

Engaged by the town of Bowdoinham, he was mustered into the Continental Army in Boston February 2, 1777, and saw extensive service. He was first in Capt. Haynes's company, Col. Edward Wigglesworth's regiment and remained with it until 1779, having undergone the privations of Valley Forge in 1778. His pay accounts run from January 15, 1777, to March 1, 1779. From this company he went to Capt. John K. Smith's company, Lieut.-Col. Calvin Smith's (6th) Massachusetts regiment of light infantry, and was with it in 1781 and perhaps later. He signed an order, payable to Samuel Armstrong, on Capt. Howard, the agent of the 6th Massachusetts regiment, at Brunswick August 9, 1784.

After his father's lands were legally settled on him in 1782, Matthew Patten sold to Steel Foster of Topsham, shipwright, lots 46 and 47* in Topsham, containing one hundred and sixty acres, bounded by the Androscoggin River and lands of John Orr and Samuel Thompson, also Patten's Island, containing eight acres, lying partly opposite the said land.† His step-mother also signed the deed and his sister Sarah was a witness. On February 25, 1784, he sold to James and Enoch Samson of Bath a lot in Bowdoinham and Topsham containing fifty acres, once owned by his father William Patten and bounded by Merrymeeting Bay, the land of Gowen Fulton and land of his uncle John Patten, also a lot of eighty-three acres in Merrymeeting Bay on a right angle from his uncle John Patten's land.‡ His wife Hannah released dower.

In 1792, calling himself "of Pownalborough," he deeded to Ezra Randall and Steel Foster a small lot of land in Topsham, for £12.§

When and whom Matthew Patten married is unknown, but it must have been before February 25, 1784, when his wife Hannah is mentioned in a deed. In 1797 John Serot, of Bowdoinham, and his wife Sarah, for love and affection and \$30, deeded to William Patten of Bowdoinham, a minor, seventy-five acres in Bowdoinham, bounded by the Kennebec River, Major Polezeezkij's|| land and John and Samuel Pitts's land, it being the same land which Serot had bought from George Pouchard, Jr., of Pownalborough in 1789. The conveyance was subject to the condition that William should permit Matthew Patten of said Bowdoinham, husbandman and father of said William, to quietly hold possession thereof during his, the said Matthew's, natural life and to recover the income and profits of the said land. John Serot was a French Huguenot who was living at Boothbay from 1757 to 1789, and it seems very probable that Matthew Patten had married his daughter and that she had died soon after the birth of her children. Matthew Patten quitclaimed his interest in the seventy-five acres, with all the buildings thereon, to William, still a minor, on June 3, 1800, this being the last record of his life thusfar found.¶

* Lot 47 had been the property of his grandfather, James McFarland.

† Lincoln Deeds, 16: 269.

‡ Lincoln Deeds, 16: 268.

§ Lincoln Deeds, 20: 99.

|| Polereczky in Lincoln Probate records. The death of Major John Polereczky, an officer in the American Revolution, aged 80, at Dresden, Maine, is reported in the *Kennebunk Gazette* of June 19, 1830.

¶ Lincoln Deeds, 41: 269; 47: 65.

Children:*

- i. WILLIAM, possibly b. about 1782 as he was a minor in 1797 and 1800, the dates of the Serot deed and the quitclaim from his father, but was old enough to marry on June 22, 1806, in Dresden, Mary Blanchard, both being "of Bowdoinham." He deeded the Serot land to Solomon Blanchard, Jr., of Bowdoinham Aug. 20, 1818.† On Sept. 25, 1826, Nathan Blanchard and Elizabeth, his wife, in her right, William Patten and Mary, his wife, of Richmond, in her right, Theophilus Blanchard and David Pottle and Sarah, his wife, in her right, deeded land to James Blanchard of Richmond.‡ He d. Sept. 10, 1835. She was alive, aged 75, in 1860.

Children:

1. *Adeline*, b. Nov. 14, 1806, in Bowdoinham; d. in Richmond Nov. 12, 1838.
 2. *Hannah*, b. June 29, 1808, in Bowdoinham.
 3. *Sarah Blanchard*, b. Sept. 17, 1811, in Richmond; d. Jan. 6, 1834.
 4. *Samuel Blanchard*, b. March 18, 1814; m. (1) Oct. 24, 1841, Caroline Chase who d. June 1, 1853; m. (2) Aug. 5, 1854, Nancy J. Grover at West Gardiner; d. Dec. 3, 1856, at Richmond.
 5. *Warren C.*, b. Dec. 28, 1816; wife Sarah and seven children in the 1860 census; d. July 24, 1861; she d. Nov. 4, 1861.
 6. *Eleanor Blanchard*, b. Sept. 9, 1819; m. in Richmond May 20, 1841, George Small, 3d.
 7. *Mary J.*, b. Feb. 11, 1822; d. Aug. 5, 1848.
 8. *Davis B.*, b. Sept. 22, 1825; m. Nov. 20, 1856, Catherine J. Wilson.
 9. *George J.*, b. May 17, 1831.
- ii. ELEANOR, b. July 13, 1784; m. (1) in Dresden, Sept., 1802, Joseph W. Crawford, by whom she had a daughter Eliza Warren Patten Crawford; m. (2) in Dresden March 10, 1813, Solomon Blanchard, Jr., by whom she had four sons and one daughter; d. in Richmond March 27, 1851.

11. COL. JAMES² PATTEN (*Matthew*,² *Hector*¹) was born in 1756, probably in Saco. He married Hannah Flood, daughter of Andrew Flood, a neighbor of the Pattens in Surry. She died in Stetson October 25, 1818, aged sixty-two. He died in Stetson December 17, 1825, aged sixty-nine.

Most of his life was spent at Surry where his family had settled in 1769, and there he was colonel of the 2d Infantry Regiment of the Counties of Hancock and Washington (1800). His mother, giving him the title of "Esq.," although she named her son John

* On March 25, 1828, in Canaan, Maine, Mr. Warren Patten and Miss Hannah Steward, both of Bloomfield (Skowhegan), were married by Eleazer Coburn, J.P. Their grandchildren claim to be cousins of the descendants of Col. JAMES (*Matthew*, *Hector*) PATTEN of Newport. No place can be found in the Newport or Surry families for Warren Patten, however. It is possible that Matthew Patten of Bowdoinham had other children than William and Eleanor and that an unknown son, born about 1786, was the father of Warren Patten of Bloomfield. This is, however, pure guesswork.

† Lincoln Deeds, 84: 179.

‡ Lincoln Deeds, Western District, 1W: 222.

"yeoman," conveyed to him Lot 33 of one hundred acres in Surry in 1795. He also owned Lot 34. Two-thirds of Lot 33 were conveyed to the husband of his oldest daughter, and the remaining third and all of Lot 34 to Philip Jarvis of Castine in 1803.* He also bought one hundred acres on Newbury Neck that year, but by 1804, with his widowed mother and his family he had followed his brother Robert to Stetson, and "of Stetsontown, Esq.," sold the Newbury Neck property to Matthew Means.†

In Stetson he bought land from Major Amasa Stetson of Dorchester, and also acquired a farm in Exeter. The earliest recorded meeting of the voters of Stetson was held at his house October 26, 1812.‡

Children, born in Surry:

- i. SUSAN, b. March 26, 1779; m. Wilbraham H. Swett of Surry, mariner, to whom her father deeded sixty-six acres in No. 6 (Surry) on the north side of Patten's Bay March 28, 1803;§ d. in Surry Sept. 10, 1848.
- ii. MARY, b. Jan. 27, 1781; d. before 1796.
- iii. SARAH, b. Feb. 14, 1783; m. in Bangor June 1, 1809, John Farnsworth of Stetson.
- iv. HANNAH, b. March 13, 1785; of Ohio, a small settlement in South Corinth, when she m. William Tibbetts Oct. 21, 1809, in Bangor. William Tibbetts witnessed several of his father-in-law's deeds.
- v. MARTHA, b. Sept. 30, 1787; d. unmarried in Passadumkeag Dec. 2, 1842. Administration was granted to her oldest brother, Matthew Patten, her clothing being divided among three of her sisters, Rhoda Davis, Susan Swett and Mary Ireland.||
- vi. JANE, b. Dec. 14, 1789; m. in Bangor Nov. 15, 1809, Moses Dwelly of Stetson.
- vii. CAPT. JAMES (twin), b. April 5, 1792; m. Chloe Chadwick who was b. in China, Me. After his father's death he moved to North Newport where he d. Jan. 21, 1835. His widow m., secondly, Atherton Clark and d. Oct. 26, 1856, aged 61.

Children:

1. *John Farnsworth*, b. June 18, 1817; m. (1) his cousin Mary A. Patten who d. Aug. 2, 1842, aged 22 years, 1 month; m. (2) before 1850 Lucy S. Burrell who d. Dec. 25, 1866, aged 38 years, 8 months, 8 days; m. (3) widow Dorcas W. Gilman to whom administration on his estate was granted in 1880; d. June 9, 1880, in Newport; the widow m., third, Stephen Burrell of Corinna.
2. *James J.*, b. Nov. 2, 1818; m. (1) before 1850 Rosella Burrill who d. Feb. 3, 1871, aged 47; m. (2) Phebe A. Clark who was executrix of his will, made May 14, 1888, and proved Nov. 1892, leaving her his entire estate for

* Hancock Deeds, 12: 282, 290.

† Hancock Deeds, 18: 809; 15: 890.

‡ *History of Stetson*, by Lilla Woods Daniels (1931). "Gilbert Patten and his Frank Merriwell Saga," by John Levi Cutler, *University of Maine Studies*, Second Series, No. 81.

§ Hancock Deeds, 12: 290.

|| Penobscot Probate.

life, with remainder to the Christian Church at North Newport, and cutting off his daughter Lucy J. Gray, wife of Calvin S. Gray;* d. Sept. 27, 1892; the widow Phebe Patten m., secondly, Manville A. Martin and d. in 1919.

3. *Nancy Emily*, b. Aug. 13, 1820; m. in Newport Oct. 31, 1844, Roswell Swett of Surry.
 4. *Albert N.*, b. Nov. 19, 1823; m. before 1850 Esther B. Richardson who d. April 3, 1891, aged 64; d. Sept. 14, 1879, and buried in Corinna. Administration on his estate was granted to Alden R. Ireland, husband of his sister, Oct. 1879, on petition of the widow. An only son, Charles E., d. Nov. 11, 1876, aged 15 years, 8 months, and a daughter, Elizabeth, m. Charles Brackett of North Newport.
 5. *Elisa A.*, b. Jan. 12, 1826; m. — Devereaux of Kezar Falls.
 6. *Priscilla Ann*; m. Alden R. Ireland; d. Feb. 8, 1891, aged 63 years, 8 days.
 7. *Elmira*; m. Eben Foss of Parsonsfield.
- viii. CAPT. MATTHEW (twin), b. April 5, 1792; m. Mary Clark who d. Jan. 1, 1881, aged 84 years, 5 months, 18 days; d. Feb. 8, 1876, aged 83 years, 10 months, at North Newport.

Children:

1. *Horatio Nelson*, b. Sept. 23, 1817; m. (1) before 1860 Rachel —; m. (2) Bethia Seavey who d. Nov. 29, 1888, aged 74 years, 2 months, 28 days; lived in Newburgh or Dixmont.
 2. *Isaac C.*, b. May 19, 1821; m. before 1850, possibly a second marriage, Rachel Atwood Brown, who m., secondly, William H. Tibbetts and d. Oct. 30, 1889, aged 61 years, 7 months.
 3. *William Clark*, b. June 26, 1824; m. Cordelia Simpson; parents of Gilbert Patten of Camden, Me., the author of the "Frank Merriwell" series.
 4. *Joseph Damon*, b. June 19, 1826; m. before 1860 Mary E. Lowell of Dexter, from whom he was separated or divorced before she made her will, Sept. 7, 1863, cutting off her two children, Frank Lamotte Patten and Ada Lavinia Patten with \$1.00 and leaving the residue to her brother Edwin C. Lowell of Palmyra.†
 5. *Mary Jane*; m. Ripley Burrill.
 6. *Susan Velzora*, b. in 1838; m. (1) Josiah Seavey; m. (2) George W. Marsh; d. in 1912.
- ix. DAVID, b. April 29, 1794; m. Betsey Ireland, who d. March 24, 1853, aged 53 years, 6 months, 23 days; he d. April 19, 1856.

Children:

1. *Mary A.*, b. July, 1820; m. her cousin John Farnsworth Patten.
2. *Samuel Ireland*, b. June 17, 1822; m. (1) Oct. 29, 1850, Mary A. Stuart, who d. April 23, 1882; m. (2) Esther T. Files; he d. July 27, 1899. He made his will Jan. 25, 1889, leaving entire estate to wife Esther T. Patten for

* Penobscot Probate.

† Penobscot Probate.

life, with remainder to son Byron P. Patten.* Another son, who had had his share, was Albert B. Patten, jeweller, of Corinna (d. June 17, 1890, aged 39 years) and a third was Charles S. Patten, jeweller, who was born in Newport and died in Medford, Mass., in 1886.

3. *David Austin*, b. Jan. 1, 1827; m. Lizzie Forsyth, who d. Nov. 14, 1909, aged 69; he d. Oct. 23, 1889, aged 62 years, 9 months, 16 days. Possibly the marriage of David A. Patten and Elizabeth Hooper at Ellsworth Falls April 29, 1860, is his first marriage, as his nephew believes that he was married twice.
4. *Amanda*; d. June 16, 1853, aged 19 years.
5. *Elizabeth*; d. Feb. 13, 1854, aged 21 years, 6 months.
- x. **MARY** (twin), b. Aug. 30, 1796; m. Joseph Ireland; d. May 28, 1862, aged 66 years, 9 months.
- xi. **ROBERT** (twin), b. Aug. 30, 1796.
- xii. **RHODA**, b. Dec. 16, 1799; m. Mark Davis.

12. **JOHN³ PATTEN** (*Matthew² Hector¹*) was baptized at Georgetown April 29, 1763, by the Brunswick minister. He was taken to Surry by his parents as a baby and spent his life there, farming a large acreage. He is said to have married Sally Clark. His wife Sally, whatever her family name, died in Surry December 12, 1842, aged sixty-nine. John Patten died in Surry March 17, 1843, aged seventy-nine.

Children, born in Surry:

- i. **JOHN**, b. June 11, 1797; m. (1) int. Nov. 1, 1820, Mary (Polly) Tourtelotte of Ellsworth who d. Jan. 15, 1831, aged 31; m. (2) April 3, 1833, Elizabeth Davis; lived in Surry and North Ellsworth where he settled about 1844; d. at West Ellsworth May 11, 1861; his widow Elizabeth (Eliza) m. Feb. 19, 1863, Jonah Heath, widower of her sister-in-law Sally Patten, and d. Nov. 26, 1888, aged 73 years, 11 months, 6 days.

Children, by first wife:

1. *Elvira*, b. March 6, d. April 20, 1821.
2. *Sophia*, b. Feb. 4, 1822; m. Oct. 12, 1837, Jonas Green; d. Feb. 18, 1870, aged 48 years, 14 days.
3. *Charlotte*, b. Oct. 8, 1823.
4. *William*, b. Oct. 28, 1825; d. Aug. 1, 1826.
5. *Joseph Warren*, b. Dec. 6, 1827; m. Jan. 5, 1848, Fannie H. Green of Blue Hill who d. Sept. 10, 1872, aged 46; he d. Sept. 4, 1894. Beside a daughter and a son (Flavious, d. Feb. 20, 1856, aged 2 years, 4 months, 10 days) who died in infancy, they had: Capt. John Helman (b. May 21, 1851; m. (1) in Ellsworth Aug. 26, 1871, Hattie A. Higgins; m. (2) in Ellsworth April 1, 1886, Charlotte A. Arvidson; d. April 25, 1924) and Minnie Agnes (b. Dec. 4, 1859; m. in Surry Dec. 8, 1877, Walter S. Leighton; d. Feb. 7, 1932).
6. *Eunice*, b. Nov. 15, 1829; m. Capt. John Davis; d. in 1907.

* Penobscot Probate.

By second wife:

7. *Elizabeth A.*, b. July 7, 1834; m. (1) at Ellsworth March 29, 1855, William A. Davis; m. (2) — Joy.
 8. *Emery*, b. Sept. 7, 1835; m. March 25, 1856, Harriet E. Clement who d. June 7, 1916; d. May 3, 1912. They were the parents of Cora D. (m. Royal Tyler, Jr.), Frank G. (1862-1871), Herbert E. (1870-1917), Hiram E. (b. Sept. 13, 1871; m. Oct. 15, 1904, Carrie Merrill), Adelbert (m. April 26, 1906, Mina C. Ray) and Lorenzo J.
 9. *Maria*, b. Oct. 1, 1837; m. April 4, 1854, Charles James; d. Jan. 11, 1866.
 10. *Leonard Davis*, d. Nov. 7, 1841, aged 14 months.
 11. *James Davis*, b. Aug. 5, 1842; m. Jan. 1, 1863, Julia F. Clement who d. June 7, 1916; d. May 3, 1912. They were the parents of Carrie F. (d. Feb. 9, 1881, aged 17 years, 5 days), Bertha F. (m. Joshua Boyd, d. Feb. 6, 1886, aged 20 years, 4 months), Rita J. (d. Nov. 9, 1873, aged 6 years, 7 months), Clifford J. (b. April 16, 1873; m. Dec. 26, 1898, Mary E. Maddocks), Frank L., Mabel (b. March 17, 1879), Irving and Edna (b. April 26, 1884).
 12. *Betsy*, b. about June 15, 1844; m. William Leighton; d. in Washington, Me., March 17, 1916, aged 71 years, 9 months, 2 days.
 13. *George William*, b. Jan. 15, 1847; m. at Ellsworth July 5, 1875, Linnie J. Saunders; d. Aug. 31, 1917. Administration on his estate was granted to his widow Oct. 2, 1917, the other heirs being a son, George Herman (b. Jan. 28, 1890) and three daughters, Margaret Jordan (b. March 26, 1879; m. Feb. 22, 1902, Alexander Moore McGown; living in Bangor), Lyda M. (b. Jan. 5, 1881; m. Nov. 29, 1906, Harry C. Cronkite of Bangor) and Louise (b. Jan. 22, 1885; m. Fred Marden of Sebec). Deceased children were Gertrude (d. June 9, 1881), W. Alton (d. May 27, 1878) and Berenice (d. Nov. 28, 1910).
 14. *Libbeus Davis*, b. July 4, 1850; m. (1) Sept. 15, 1874, Georgia S. Wiggin who d. March 12, 1902, aged 45; m. (2) Aug. 30, 1915, Agnes E. (Johnson) Staples who d. May 8, 1925, aged 54 years, 28 days; d. Sept. 10, 1921. Administration on his estate was granted to the widow and son Arthur Nov. 1, 1921. Two daughters also survived him, Mildred E. (m. April 7, 1906, Roland B. Austin of Ellsworth) and Bessie Leighton Patten of Bangor.
 15. *Margaret*; m. (1) Solomon Jordan; m. (2) Hiram McGlauffin; d. May 9, 1932.
- ii. *LYDIA*, b. Dec. 11, 1798; m. May 3, 1819, Nathaniel Tourtelotte of Ellsworth; d. May 6, 1829.
 - iii. *SOPHIA*, b. Jan. 5, 1801.
 - iv. *SALLY*, b. June 3, 1803; m. April 2, 1822, Jonah Heath of Surry; d. Jan. 29, 1862.
 - v. *AMBROSE*, b. June 25, 1808; m. (1) int. Aug. 3, 1828, Apphia Tourtelotte who d. May 14, 1829, aged 20; m. (2) Nov. 3, 1832, Sarah Dutch who d. Oct. 10, 1869, aged 60; m. (3) Sept. 21, 1871, Mary Smith; d. May 3, 1880, in Surry where he had presumably lived on the ancestral farm, administration being granted to his widow, her sureties being Benjamin Dollard and John Cain of Ellsworth.

Child, by first wife:

1. *Apphia*, adopted by John and Susan Jellerson; d. Oct. 18, 1846, aged 17 years, 7 months.

By second wife:

2. *George A.*, b. April 24, 1834; m. Jan. 1, 1875, Sophia Osgood; of Clear Creek County, Colorado, in 1880.
 3. *Sarah E.*, b. May 4, 1836; m. (1) May 4, 1860, George W. Curtis; m. (2) before 1880 Henry H. Phillips; d. July 16, 1922.
 4. *Lydia*, b. Sept. 21, 1838; d. before 1880.
 5. *Priscilla*, b. May 10, 1841; m. before 1880 — Haynes of Boston; a widow in 1882.
 6. *Ambrase*, b. July 11, 1844; of Clear Creek County, Colorado, in 1880; had wife Eva H. in 1882.
 7. *Charles L.*, b. May 10, 1847; of Clear Creek County, Colorado, in 1880; had wife Eva R. in 1882.
 8. *Emeline*, b. Sept. 1, 1849; d. April 13, 1864.
- vi. **VESPASIAN**, b. June 2, 1811; *non compos mentis*; d. unmarried March, 1867.
- vii. **NANCY S.**, b. Aug. 17, 1812; m. int. Nov. 2, 1836, Nathan Phillips; d. Feb. 9, 1885.
- viii. **HARRIET N.**, b. March 21, 1817; m. (1) Dec. 1, 1836, Joseph Green who d. June 25, 1846; m. (2) April 29, 1868, John Atkins Green who d. June 1, 1874; m. (3) Asa Morgan of Morgan's Bay; d. Sept. 10, 1882.

13. **ROBERT^s PATTEN** (*Matthew² Hector¹*) was baptized at Union River (Ellsworth) October 7, 1772, by Rev. John Murray of Boothbay. He married Hannah —.

About the year 1800 he became the first settler of Stetson, Maine, building a cabin back of a picturesque ledge, on what in 1931 was known as the Green Demeritt place. By 1818 he had died or moved to some other town as his name does not appear on a Stetson tax-list of that year.

Children:

- i. **ROBERT**, b. April 13, 1803, the first white child born in Stetson; m. (1) Naomi Ireland who d. May 1, 1864, aged 59 years, 10 months and is buried in North Newport; m. (2) Abigail Tibbetts. The 1850 census shows him and his first wife living in Newport with one son, while in 1860 they were living alone, he a retired farmer. The last years of his life were spent in Bradford, and he is said to be buried in Clinton. A great-nephew, Frank Patten, lived with his widow.

Child:

1. *Robert Alonzo*, aged 18 in 1850; m. Dora R. Poland. He enlisted for the Civil War at Augusta Jan. 4, 1864, aged 32, his birthplace being Newport. In 1864, a private in the 1st District of Columbia Cavalry, he was sick at Portsmouth. On March 17, 1865, he was transferred to the 1st Maine Cavalry and mustered out July 17, 1865.

His wife died in Newport in 1782, her gravestone stating that she was the wife of Rev. R. A. Patten. In 1860, by the census, they had two children, Robert O., aged 5, and Irvin S., aged 3, and another son, Leonard H., 1870-1871, was buried beside his mother.

- ii. SUSANNA D., b. Dec. 12, 1805; m. Joseph B. Damon July 4, 1826.
- iii. DAVID S., b. Dec. 31, 1807; m. (1) Lucy —, who d. May 7, 1846, aged 37 years, 5 months (Lucy R. on gravestone in Bradford); m. (2) Nancy —. His two oldest children were recorded in Carmel in 1836 and 1841, but by deeds he was of Orono in 1836, of Argyle in 1838, and of Bradford in 1844.

Children, by first wife:

- 1. *Warren L.*, b. April 11, 1836, in Carmel.
- 2. *Franklin R.*, b. May 8, 1841, in Carmel.
- 3. *George H.*, d. March 11, 1845, aged 7 months.

By second wife:

- 4. *Eliza A.*, d. May 3, 1851, aged 2 years, 1 month.
- iv. DANIEL M.; m. Lydia Whiting who d. July 23, 1843, aged 39 years, 9 months; he d. July 3, 1846, aged 45. Administration on the estate of Daniel M. Patten of Newport was granted to Robert Patten, next-of-kin, July 27, 1846. The estate was insolvent, but allowances were made to minor children.

Children:

- 1. *Helen*; m. — Williams.
- 2. *Georgia*; m. William Quimby.
- v. HANNAH J., b. April 29, 1817; m. Eliphalet Perkins; d. March 17, 1879, aged 62 years, 11 months.

WILLIAM PATTEN OF BOSTON

WILLIAM PATTEN, traditionally stated to have come to New England with his brother Hector, remained in Boston, where on November 22, 1735, he married Mary Lambert at King's Chapel. Patten went into business as a grocer and apparently was able and prosperous. His premises were in Cornhill where the selectmen gave him their authorization to open his shop in response to his petition dated February 7, 1738. In this town record he is called Capt. William Patten and it is not improbable that he followed the sea before his marriage. In 1740/1 William Patten ("belongs to the Life Guard") was one of the Boston constables, and in 1742/3 William Patten was chosen a clerk of the market. There was, however, another William Patten in Boston at this time and there is nothing to differentiate their careers.*

In 1748 Mary Patten received by the will of her uncle, William Lambert, a wealthy customs official, a silver salver and a mourning ring.

The great Boston fire of March 20, 1760, destroyed Patten's shop and caused him great losses, but did not ruin him as on November 29, 1760, he took over a long lease of two brick buildings in Cornhill from William Payne, the title to the property being in Harvard College, and there he was living and doing business when he died in 1770.

Mary Patten died before her husband, and in his last years her niece Mary Lambert lived with him and kept his house. Unhappily his only child, Robert Patten, was a disobedient and unsatisfactory son, whose whereabouts were unknown when the father drew his will.

William Patten of Boston, grocer, "weak and infirm," made his will August 28, 1770. To my niece Mary Lambert who now lives with me, £70, in token of my esteem for her. To Mary Davis, daughter of Capt. William Davis of Boston, £5. To my kinswoman Lydia Patten, now residing in Boston, spinster, £40. To my kinsman, Capt. John Patten, my clock. To the Rev. Mr. John Moorhead of Boston, clerk, a gold ring and a pair of gloves. To my son Robert Patten, £60 yearly and for every year during his natural life. To the minister, wardens, and vestry of Trinity Church in Boston, £40 for the use and benefit of the church. My executors shall sell and dispose of my garden land at the south

* William Patten from Charlestown kept the "Green Dragon" tavern in Boston in 1714 and was admitted an inhabitant Nov. 2, 1715. In 1733 his stand was on Merchant Row and in 1736 in West Street. He died in 1754.

part of said Boston, also my negro girl named Phillis. Residue to Edward Payne, merchant, and Zephaniah Thayer, upholsterer, in trust for the purposes following, viz: In case my son shall for three years next after my decease behave in a decent becoming manner, then I give and devise the same to him, his heirs and assigns forever, to hold in fee simple. In case my son shall not behave in such manner as to entitle him to this bequest, then in case he should marry and have issue, I devise the same to such issue to hold in fee simple. But if the said Robert Patten shall not by his conduct entitle him to his said bequest, and should not have any lawful issue, than I give and devise the same residue of my estate to and among my lawful heirs. Executors: Edward Payne and Zephaniah Thayer, both of said Boston. Witnesses: Benjamin Clark, Andrew Barclay, Joseph Carnes. Three days later he signed a codicil directing that before the trust set up in his will should take effect his executors should pay all just and lawful debts as Robert should owe to any person or persons. "And further in case my said son Robert be now dead or shall die before me, in this case I order and direct my executors to pay all his said debts out of my said estate before any dividend be made agreeable to said will."

The will was proved and allowed on September 14, 1770, and Edward Payne, one of the executors, entered an inventory of £706:4:8 on September 28. Among the items of personal property are the clock which went to his nephew Captain John Patten, valued at £6, a walnut desk, six walnut chairs, a looking-glass with a walnut frame, three mahogany tea tables (one square, one oval and one round), seven pictures, seven maps, one pair of "images," china cups and saucers, wine glasses, decanters, etc., a "floor cloth" (carpet), and books worth £4:9:4. There were fifty-one pounds of pewter, and among his clothes a velvet cloak worth 16s. and a quilted coat worth 20s. Pew No. 92 in Trinity Church was worth £10, and the remainder of the lease of two brick tenements in Cornhill was entered at £426. The executor sold the shop-goods, the household furniture and plate and realized £232.

On January 28, 1774, the executors presented an account. They had paid the specific legacies, three years' ground rent to "the college," had settled Robert's debts, had paid him his annuity for the three years, and it would seem, although it was not specifically stated, that his behaviour had been sufficiently good to pass his father's test and that the estate was turned over to him.*

* Suffolk Probate, 69: 267-270, 290, 292; 73: 878, 879, 881.

Child:

- i. **ROBERT.** He was a sailor, and did not lead what his father considered "a decent and becoming life." He was bound to sea in 1766 and was in parts unknown in 1770. There are two marriages in Boston records which may be his—Robert Patten and Jane Carter on Jan. 2, 1771, and Robert Patten and Elizabeth Egens on Jan. 10, 1777—but at his death before March 14, 1777, he had no wife or child, so that a marriage less than six weeks previously is highly improbable. In 1776 he had served on the privateer *Diligent* with Capt. John Lambert, probably his maternal cousin. The papers dealing with his estate show that he had assisted his cousin Matthew Patten (*Heotor*) in his purchase of lands in eastern Maine.

His will, made Aug. 4, 1766, left all of his property to his "good friend" Levi Gennings of Boston, felt-maker, who was also named executor. Witnesses: Richard Dana, Samuel Swift, John Greateon. It was proved March 14, 1777. The inventory showed nothing but a few articles of clothing and the Harvard College leases, valued at £100. Possibly having served the probationary period of three years of decent living he had reverted to his former life and wasted his father's estate.

In 1801 Joseph Pierce, merchant, of Boston, was appointed administrator *de bonis non* for the purpose of disposing of his interest in the lands in Maine, which were described as "the Tract called the twenty Associates' Land in Common with the other Proprietors in the Right originally Adam Winthrops." In Camden, Hope and on Madornquoog long island there were 216 acres, valued at \$216, and in lands lying beyond Hope and not laid out into townships there were 577 acres, which, at sixty cents an acre, made \$346.20. Against these assets were presented two notes payable to Hazen and Jarvis and signed by Matthew Patten and Robert Patten on Sept. 16, 1772, on which, in unpaid principal and interest, there remained \$2,400 due. The court ordered Mr. Pierce to sell the assets at public sale and he proceeded to do so, placing advertisements in the *Columbian Sentinel* and the *Kennebec Gazette* for three successive weeks in December, 1801. Obviously the estate was insolvent.*

* Suffolk Probate, 75: 473-475; 76: 545; 99: 826, 447, 450, 504-5, 604; 100: 122-3.

ROBERT PATTEN

1. ROBERT PATTEN, the youngest of the four brothers, according to family tradition, sailed for New England from Coleraine, county Londonderry, Ireland, in 1737 with his wife and infant son Hector. According to one version of the story his wife, born a McGlauthlin, died on the voyage to America, but by another she survived for a few years after their settlement in Maine. Basing judgment on the fact of Patten's first appearance of record in Maine in 1738 and the age of Hector by later deposition, it would seem that we can safely accept the uncontradictory portion of the tradition. As to his wife, the second story of her death seems the more likely, inasmuch as in 1740, when he made his first sale of land in Maine, Robert Patten had a wife Margaret who released her dower.* It is most probable that she was Margaret McGlauthlin.

Robert Patten

Robert Patten first appears in Wells, where William Patten was then living and Matthew Patten had also lived for a few years before moving to the Saco River settlements. On September 21, 1738, calling himself laborer, he bought from Andrew Eliot, also of Wells, fifty acres in the neighboring town of Arundel on the northwest side of Saco old-path, and presumably settled in Arundel, which was his home for the rest of his life, soon afterward.†

In 1740 he sold the fifty acres to a fellow Scot, Archibald Dunlap of Wells, and several months later, now a husbandman, bought from Samuel Hutchings, Jr., a hundred acre farm on the road to Saco. A one-third share in Credifer's mill at Kennebunk was his next purchase, in 1744 when he was called a mason, and from then until 1760 he added to his farm by the purchase of small acreages from Benjamin Downing, John Watson and George March.‡

Margaret Patten died in or before 1743, and on December 26, 1743, Patten married Florence Johnston, daughter of an Ulster family which had settled in Scarborough, some twenty miles to the east of Arundel.

* York Deeds, 21: 239.

† York Deeds, 21: 238.

‡ York Deeds, 24: 72; 26: 88; 29: 118; 30: 64; 31: 55; 41: 265.

In 1753 he received a license from the court to keep an inn, and thereafter he is usually called inn-holder in the records.

An interesting transaction, showing the close association of the Ulster Scots in their new homes, took place in 1760 when Alley MacColey, a Scotch tailor and perhaps a friend of long standing, received the grant of two acres from Robert Patten's home farm, his brother Matthew from Biddeford being present as witness.*

Patten continued to buy land in Arundel until near the close of his life, taking fifteen acres from Jabez Dorman in 1764, thirty-seven acres from Benjamin Goodwin in 1767 and twenty-five acres from Paul March in 1771.

Robert Patten, of Arundel, yeoman, died between March 15 and April 10, 1775, the days of the making and proving of his will. To his wife Florence he left one-third of his entire estate, the clock and the largest looking-glass. To his son Actor "all my right and title that I now have in a certain Saw-mill at Topsham where he now lives." To his son Robert "one hundred acres of land where he now lives, also one-third part of my right in a saw-mill standing on Kennebunk River & Priviledges of the same, also one-third part of my fresh Meadow at Brimstone meadow so called." To his three daughters Margaret, Mary and Rachel, "twenty acres of Land apease which land lays at the mouth of Duck brook so called in Arundel aforesaid as may appear by the laying out of the said land; it is to be understood that part of the said Sixty acres of Land Lays on the northeast side of my son Robert's Land & is Bounded on Land of Benjamin Durrel & Benjamin Thompson & also by my son Robert's Land." "My will is also that Rachel shall have so much Household goods so as to Equal with my other two Daughters." To his two sons James and John, "all my estate which I have not as yet Disposed of or given away, Towit Lands, Buildings & Cattle Except my salt marsh & thatch bed which I do give to my son James." Debts and charges were to be paid by sons James and John. Executors: wife Florence and son Robert. Witnesses: Thomas Perkins, Robert Patten, Dummer Mitchell.†

There is no record of the death of widow Florence Patten.

Child, by first wife:

2. i. HECROB (usually written Actor), b. in Ireland Jan. 2, 1737, by tradition.

* York Deeds, 86: 124.

† York Probate, No. 14828.

By second wife:

- ii. MARGARET; m. Israel Cleaves. In 1779 they were of Swan's Pond Falls which later was in the town of Dayton.
3. iii. ROBERT.
4. iv. JAMES.
5. v. JOHN.
- vi. MARY, b. in 1752; m., int. Oct. 12, certificate Dec. 4, 1769, William Wilson of Topsham; d. April 20, 1833, aged 81.
- vii. RACHEL; bapt. as an adult July 30, 1775; m. in Arundel Aug. 7, 1792, as his second wife, Capt. William Smith.

2. CAPT. ACTOR² PATTEN (*Robert*¹) was, by family tradition, born in Ireland January 2, 1737, and brought to New England by his parents as an infant in arms. In a deposition made in 1769 his age was estimated as "about 31." In 1761 his father bought for £45 one-half of three hundred-acre lots in Topsham from John Downing of Newington and Enoch Danford of Topsham, originally set off to Benjamin Thomas by the Pejepscot Company, "lying above Brunswick Fort, fronting on Amascoggin River on ye eastern side thereof,"* and settled his oldest son thereon. The young man was surrounded by Scotch-Irish neighbors, including Patten cousins, and on November 20, 1766, at Falmouth, he married into another Ulster family when he took as his bride Jane McLellan, daughter of Hugh and Jane McLellan of Gorham, the ceremony being performed by Rev. Thomas Brown.†

As Hector Patten, he was commissioned captain in Col. Samuel McCobb's regiment (First Lincolnshire Regiment of Massachusetts Militia) on July 1, 1776, and was one of Col. McCobb's captains (8th Co.) in the Penobscot Expedition in the summer of 1779.

In addition to his original holdings in Topsham, Capt. Patten bought between 1767 and 1808, as the Lincoln County deeds disclose, about fifteen hundred acres in Topsham, Bowdoinham, Bowdoin and Lisbon, and several saw-mill shares and rights. Some of the farms he later disposed of to purchasers, but most of them he held until his death or deeded to his numerous children.

Actor Patten died in Topsham July 25, 1816. His will was dated June 21 and proved August 29, 1816. The legatees were his wife Jane, sons Actor, Hugh, Robert and William, and daughters Elizabeth Patterson, Mary Buckminister, Abigail Tate, Margaret Sweet, Rebecca McLellan and Rachel Patten. The widow and son Actor were named executors. The residuary estate was

* York Deeds, 36: 187.

† The intention was recorded in Topsham Oct. 30, and the certificate returned Nov. 18, (*sic*) 1766.

distributed in 1825.* In 1835 all of his surviving children and the children of his deceased son Actor joined in a superb deed, genealogically speaking, when they and their husbands and wives, twenty-two grantors in all, giving their places of residence, sold to John P. Mellen land in Saco which Capt. Patten had bought from Foxwell Cutts in 1807.†

The widow Jane Patten died August 28, 1835, in Topsham.

Children, born in Topsham:‡

- i. ROBERT; d. Jan. 14, 1767, aged four months.
- ii. ELIZABETH; m. in Topsham January 7, 1789, Benjamin Patterson of Pepperellboro (Saco); he d. in Saco Aug. 11, 1834, aged 72; she was living in 1835.
6. iii. ACTOR, b. March 5, 1771.
- iv. ABIGAIL; m. Aug. 26, 1796, William Tate; d. Jan. 4, 1863, aged 89 years, 6 months.
- v. MARGARET; m. (1) May 14, 1797, Joseph Sweet; m. (2) Feb. 24, 1820, Noah Melcher of Brunswick; living in Passadumkeag in 1835.
7. vi. ROBERT, b. about 1777.
- vii. MARK; m. (1) Jan. 24, 1803, Dr. Thomas Buckminister of Saco who d. May 7, 1817; m. (2) in Jan., 1822, Dr. Richard Cutt Shannon of Saco; d. at Passadumkeag Jan. 2, 1834, aged 54 (gravestone). Dr. Shannon, Harvard, 1795, d. in Saco April 26, 1828. Before settling in Saco he was a Navy surgeon.
- viii. JANE; m. Feb. 26, 1807, Col. Jonathan Marston of Monmouth; he d. Apr. 14, 1849; she d. Apr. 18, 1871.
- ix. REBECCA; m. March 18, 1813, Robert McLellan of Gorham, her cousin, and lived in the brick McLellan mansion at Fort Hill; he d. Nov. 28, 1890; she d. Jan. 20, 1861.
- x. RACHEL, b. July 8, 1784; d. unmarried April 4, 1874, aged 89 years, 9 months. Her father had given her fifteen acres in Topsham in 1812.§ Her will was made Jan. 23, 1864, and names her nephew Charles Tate Patten executor. To my brother William Patten. To Mary Jane Patten. To Mariah Tera Patten. To Charles T. Patten, my dwelling house in Topsham, near the Baptist meeting-house, he to pay \$20. each to William W. Patten, Isaac W. Patten, Robert Tate, Patten Tate, Charles W. Patten and Rogers G. Patten. To Rachel Jane Ellwell. To Hannah P. Darrah. To Maria Tera Patten. All furniture to be divided between Hannah Marston, Rachel P. Brown, Octavia Marston, Mary Jacobs, Jane Sanders, Lucinda Crawford, Abigail Patterson, Phebe Patten, Caroline Wiggins, Paulina McLellan, Frances Percy, Elizabeth Patten, Mary Jane Patten and Eliza Patten.||
8. xi. HUGH, b. July 29, 1769.
9. xii. WILLIAM, b. Sept. 20, 1793.

3. ROBERT² PATTEN (*Robert*¹) was presumably born in Arundel about the year 1745. He married Sarah Deering, daughter of Humphrey and Abigail Deering of Arundel.

* Lincoln Probate, 19: 59.

† York Deeds, 154: 137.

‡ The date given for marriage of members of the family living in Topsham is often the date of the return of the marriage certificate.

§ Lincoln Deeds, 90: 111.

|| Sagadahoc Probate.

When his father died in 1775 Robert Patten was living on a farm of one hundred acres in his native town which became his by the paternal will and testament. In 1779 he bought from his sister Margaret Cleaves the twenty acres which had been devised to her and which "adjoined land on which the said Robert now lives."* His life, sparsely recorded, seems to have been that of a farmer.

In the census of 1790 his family consisted of himself and wife, two boys under sixteen and four girls, the two oldest children having left home.

In the *Kennebunk Weekly Visitor* of May 21, 1814, is the following account of Sarah (Deering) Patten: "Died, In Arundel, on the 9th inst., Mrs. Sarah, wife of Mr. Robert Patten, aged 73. Although Mrs. Patten had not been a public professor of religion, there are but few in whom the human virtues shone more conspicuous; some weeks, however, before her decease, during her last illness which was long and distressing and which she endured with remarkable patience, she obtained through Grace a good hope in her precious Saviour, which continued to be her joy and support to her last. Blessed are the dead who die in the Lord."

In the *Kennebunk Gazette* of May 13, 1826, is the following obituary notice: "In Kennebunk-Port, Mr. Robert Patten, aged 80. When a good man dies in a good old age, it is for the interest of society that particular notice should be taken of his character. Mr. Patten was ever a faithful friend to his country, in the worst of times. Industrious and attentive to his business, punctual in the fulfillment of his obligations, sincere to his friends and faithful to his family. Patient in suffering a long and painful disease without murmuring or repining, he resigned his breath to him who gave it, with faith in God and hope in the Resurrection and the life."

Children, born in Arundel:

10. i. ROBERT, b. March 14, 1769. The family of Robert Patten of Litchfield give this date for his birth and Arundel as the place thereof. John Patten of Topsham stated in 1833 that Robert Patten of Litchfield was a son of Robert Patten of Arundel, the emigrant from Ireland. This is obviously not the case, but that he was a son of Robert Patten of Arundel and a grandson of the emigrant seems a logical conclusion to draw from this evidence.
- ii. HANNAH, bapt. Oct. 6, 1771; m. in Arundel April 22, 1790, Nathaniel Currier.
- iii. SARAH, bapt. Oct. 6, 1771; m. in Arundel July 22, 1822, Benjamin Stone; a widow, living with her sister-in-law Isabella Patten in 1850.
- iv. BERRY, bapt. Aug. 9, 1772; m., Int. May 2, 1807, Daniel Bickford.

* York Deeds, 63: 184.

- v. ABIGAIL, bapt. Aug. 6, 1775. She and her sister Mary (Molly), single women, deeded to their brother William all interest in the estate of their father, reserving a home in their father's house as long as they should remain unmarried, on Aug. 17, 1826.* She died, unmarried, in Saco May 28, 1858, aged 82 years, 8 months, at the home of Samuel Underwood, Jr., the husband of her niece.†
- vi. JAMES, bapt. June 20, 1779; presumably d. in infancy.
- vii. MOLLY, bapt. May 8, 1782; living, unmarried, with her sister-in-law Isabella Patten in 1850.
11. viii. WILLIAM, bapt. April 26, 1786.

4. JAMES² PATTEN (*Robert*¹) was born about 1747 in Arundel, and was baptized as an adult July 30, 1775. He married on December 7, 1775, Sarah Stone, daughter of Capt. Dixey Stone of Arundel, who died before 1789, possibly in 1786 when her youngest son was born. Her three surviving children, Robert, Rachel and Johnson, were heirs of their grandfather Stone in 1795 when their father was appointed their guardian to receive their share of the Stone estate.‡

James Patten's second wife was a young widow, Abigail (Meserve) Fogg whom he married in Scarborough October 6, 1789. She was a daughter of Daniel and Mehitable (Bragdon) Meserve and widow of David Fogg.

In 1783 he sold to Sarah Merrill the salt marsh and in 1790 to Josiah Hutchins and Daniel Mitchell the thatch bed on Batson's River, both of which lots had been specifically devised to him by his father.§

The farm which Robert Patten had left to his sons James and John in common was not divided until October 28, 1802, after John's death. On petition to the probate court, Thomas Perkins 3d, Robert Towne and Nicholas Downing made the division. To James Patten was set off one hundred and fifty-three acres, bounded southeasterly by land set off to the heirs of John Patten, southwesterly by land of Thomas Durrell and Robert Patten, northwesterly by land willed to the daughters of Robert Patten, deceased, and by land of Thomas Durrell and Daniel Merrill, northeasterly by John Mitchell's and William Smith's land to Jere Dorman's land, thence by Dorman's land to Lord's land, thence by Lord's land to Hanscom's land, thence by Hanscom's land southwest forty-four rods to a stake, thence south forty-seven degrees west by said Hanscom's land seventy-nine rods to a stake which is the north corner of land set off to the heirs of John Patten.||

* York Deeds, 173: 191.

† *Maine Democrat*.

‡ York Probate, No. 21052.

§ York Deeds, 34: 26; 55: 460.

|| York Probate, No. 14628.

The death of Mr. James Patten, aged 70, appears in the *Kennebunk Weekly Visitor* of May 10, 1817. Abigail Patten, his widow, was appointed administratrix of the estate June 16, 1817, her sureties being Enoch Coleman and Daniel Patten. Later, when she was ordered by the court to sell sufficient real-estate to raise \$1,640 to pay debts, Seth Burnham had taken the place of Coleman as surety. The heirs at law, Johnson, Daniel and James Patten, consented to the sale on October 4, 1819, and James bought the family pew in the Baptist meeting-house. As her dower, in addition to other land, the widow received six and one-half acres of land on which the house and barn stood "beginning at the new road and running north 85° west fifty-eight rods to the town road, then north north-west by the said road twenty-nine rods, then east seventeen rods to the new road, then south-east by the said new road to the first bounds." Hugh McColloch bought the reversion of the widow's dower, and Daniel Nason bought two-thirds of the farm which amounted to eighty-three acres.*

Two years later, on April 7, 1821, Abigail Patten released to John Lord, Jr., of Kennebunkport, all her right in one hundred and twenty acres, more or less, and the farm buildings owned by her late husband James Patten.† She died September 15, 1838, aged eighty-three.

Children, born in Arundel:

12. i. ROBERT, bapt. Nov. 10, 1776.
- ii. MARY, bapt. Aug. 23, 1778; d. before 1795, when her brothers and sister were heirs of their grandfather Stone.
- iii. RACHEL, bapt. July 25, 1779; d. before 1819 when she was not one of her father's heirs-at-law.
13. iv. JOHNSON, bapt. Sept. 1, 1782.
- v. DIXEY, bapt. Jan. 17, 1786; d. before 1795.

By second wife:

14. vi. DANIEL, b. July 26, 1792.
15. vii. JAMES, bapt. Aug. 28, 1796.

5. JOHN² PATTEN (*Robert*¹) was born, according to his gravestone, on August 26, 1753, and presumably in Arundel. He first married Rachel —, who must have died soon after the birth of her son in 1775. His second wife, whom he married November 16, 1779, was Sarah Wiswell, daughter of Thomas Wiswell, a wealthy Arundel merchant. Patten's death is recorded on August 20, 1802, and his estate was in probate that year. His widow died January 1, 1803, in her forty-sixth year. Their grave-

* York Probate, No. 14618.

† York Deeds, 109: 73.

stones must have been erected years later, when their children's memory for dates had become indistinct, for the year of his death was given as 1804, while the inscription for his wife states that she died on January 1, 1805, aged forty-seven years, four days, which does not agree with the recorded date of her birth on April 18, 1757.

John Patten served in the army during the Revolution, as his gravestone states, but the facts of his service are possibly entangled with the records of other John Pattens as nothing is found which positively identifies him as a soldier. The rest of his life seems to have been spent quietly on his Arundel farm.

Sarah Patten, widow, and Seth Burnham were appointed administrators of John Patten's estate on September 3, 1802, James Patten and Nicholas Downing being their sureties. The inventory of the estate of John Patten, gentleman, disclosed property valued at \$2,874.* After their mother's death, Thatcher Goddard, the husband of one of their Wiswell aunts and a man of considerable wealth and prominence in Portland, was appointed guardian of the minor children, Mary, Rachel, Esther, John and Thomas Patten, on June 11, 1804.†

The heirs and James Patten proceeded to divide the land inherited from their father by John and James Patten and which they had been holding in common. The share of the heirs of John Patten was described as follows: "the homestead and buildings belonging to the said deceased consisting of one hundred and twenty-nine acres of land—beginning at the country road adjoining Dummer Mitchell's land, thence running north forty-seven Degrees west three hundred and six rods, then north east five rods, then north forty-seven degrees west one hundred and twenty rods to a maple tree spotted on four sides, thence north forty-three degrees east eighty-eight rods to a stake in Hanscom's line, thence south forty-seven degrees east one hundred and twenty rods to Samuel Lewis' land, thence south forty-three degrees west forty-four rods to a stake, thence south forty-seven degrees east two hundred and six rods to the county road, thence to the first mentioned bounds."

Mr. and Mrs. Goddard moved to Charlestown and later to Roxbury, but although two of the Patten girls were with them in Charlestown in 1806, the children seem to have made their home in Arundel. On July 26, 1806, Enoch T. Coleman and Susanna his wife, Eunice Downing, widow, of Charlestown, Middlesex, Mary Patten of Charlestown and Thatcher Goddard of Charles-

* York Probate, No. 14628.

† York Probate, No. 14625.

town, as guardian of Rachel, Esther, John and Thomas Patten, deeded thirty-six acres of land in Arundel to Daniel Nason.*

Child, by first wife:

- i. JAMES, bapt. July 1, 1775; living in 1790 when, by the census the family consisted of one male over sixteen (the father), one male under sixteen (James) and seven females, but dead, *s.p.*, before the children gave the deed to Nason in 1806.

By second wife, born in Arundel:

- ii. EUNICE, b. Oct. 27, 1780; m. April 10, 1802, Samuel Downing.
- iii. MARY, b. June 19, 1783; m., int. Feb. 8, 1825, Samuel Lewis, cabinet-maker, of Kennebunkport. She d. *s.p.* in 1862. Her will, dated May 17, 1858, mentions her sister Susan Coleman (my best black shawl), niece Susan Wormwood (brass andirons), sister Rachel Hinkley (two dresses and best red merino shawl), niece Mrs. John B. Maling (best damask table cloth), niece Mrs. Woodbury Goodwin (small sized table cloth), niece Roxana Hinkley (feather bed and bedstead, card table). Residue to Village Baptist Church of Kennebunkport. Executor: Capt. Eliphalet Perkins.†
- iv. SUSANNAH, b. March 22, 1785; m. May 12, 1803, Enoch T. Coleman; d. March 22, 1871, aged 86.
- v. RACHEL, b. June 12, 1787; m. Jan. 7, 1809, William Hinkley of Topsham. One of her daughters, Mary W. Hinkley of Bangor, m. Woodbury Goodwin of Kennebunkport.‡
- vi. ESTHER, b. May 31, 1791; m. Dec. 21, 1814, Jacob Curtis.
- vii. JOHN, b. Feb. 17, 1793; living in 1806. Possibly he was the apprentice for whom Simon Emery of Biddeford advertised in the *Kennebunk Weekly Visitor* on Feb. 10, 1810—"Ran away from subscriber in Biddeford, an apprentice boy named John Patten, about 16 years old, light complexion, light eyes, dark hair. Had on blue jacket and blue trousers. Simon Emery." No further record.
- viii. THOMAS, b. Aug. 23, 1795; d. July 4, 1815, "aged 24 y's, 11 m's, 11 d's" (gravestone—wrong by *five years*).

6. ACTOR³ PATTEN (*Actor*,² *Robert*¹) was born in Topsham March 5, 1771. He married Anna Wilson, daughter of William and Mary (Patten) Wilson, his cousin, in Topsham December 7, 1800. Both died in Topsham, he on April 27, 1829, she December 2, 1832.§

In 1803 Patten began accumulating land in Topsham with the purchase of seventy-eight acres from the Thompson heirs. From his brother Hugh he bought in 1818 one hundred and ten acres which their father had sold to him and also all of the real estate which Hugh had inherited by their father's will. Later purchases, in addition to small lots in Topsham, were made of land in Lisbon from the Gardiners of Gardiner and the Vaughans and Merricks of Hallowell.||

* York Deeds, 89: 269.

† York Probate, No. 11415.

‡ Newspaper of March 20, 1841.

§ First Parish burying ground.

|| Lincoln Deeds, 57: 179, 183; 101: 185, 186; 110: 75; 117: 48, 192, 198.

His wife and his son John were named executors of Actor Patten's will, which was made December 4, 1828, and proved August 24, 1829. His estate was shared by his sons John, William, Isaac, Thomas, Otis and Bryce and his daughters Mary Jane, Rachel Caroline and Eliza. In his account as surviving executor in 1838, John listed the expenses of his sister Caroline's last illness.*

Children, born in Topsham:

- i. CHARLOTTE, b. Aug. 29, 1801; d. Nov. 27, 1801.
- ii. JOHN STOCKBRIDGE, b. Aug. 17, 1802; m. (1) Mary Elizabeth Treat Jan. 1, 1835; she d. Sept. 24, 1841, aged 26 years, 9 months; m. (2) Mary D. Buswell May 11, 1842; d. Oct. 26, 1882, in Bangor and was buried Oct. 29 in Enfield; his widow d. Feb. 27, 1905, "one of Bangor's oldest and most prominent women."† In Enfield John Patten seems to have been a lumberman and as a magistrate there his name appears as officiating at marriages. According to his widow's obituary he was at one time a dealer in music in Bangor, but the Penobscot Registry of Deeds testifies to his great interest in land and lumber.

Children, by first wife:

1. *Weston S.*; survived his father, but left Bangor, his later whereabouts never known.
2. *Emma Frances*; d. Jan. 25, 1856, aged 18 years, 9 months; buried at Enfield.
- iii. MAJOR WILLIAM WILSON, b. Jan. 18, 1805; m. Nov. 5, 1832, Bethia E. Abell of Bowdoin; d. Nov. 1, 1888; she d. Jan. 18, 1889, aged eighty-two years, ten months.

Children, born in Topsham:

1. *George Abell*, b. Dec. 20, 1833; m. May 30, 1861, Anna McKenzie.
2. *Caroline*, b. March 22, 1835; d. unmarried in Freeport.
3. *Harriet Nott*, b. Dec. 13, 1836; m. June 28, 1866, Robert Alexander Brown of Hudson, Wisconsin.
4. *William Tate*, b. Feb. 8, 1845; d. Aug. 20, 1864, aged eighteen.
5. *Bryce McLellan*, b. Aug. 19, 1850; m. Dec. 26, 1878, Martha Wheeler Curtis; d. June 8, 1915. Their children: Ralph J., Bertha S. (m. Wilbur L. Hunter), Anna Wilson (m. Harrison Morton Stone), Ella A. (m. Elmer W. Nickerson), Paulina (m. John A. Minott) and Margaret S.
- iv. ISAAC WILSON, b. Jan. 16, 1807; d. unmarried May 24, 1883, at the home of his brother Charles.
- v. MARY JANE, b. March 19, 1809; d. unmarried in Topsham March 30, 1893. Her will, dated Sept. 10, 1884, left to her great-niece Anne Wilson Patten (then less than a year old) two pictures "Morning" and "Evening" which had been given her by her grandfather Wilson. To sister Eliza S. Patten. To nephew Bryce M. Patten and to his children Caroline, Ralph C. and Bertha E. To each of the four children of Charles T. Patten. To George P. Brown, son of her niece Harriet. To each of the three children of her brother

* Lincoln Probate, 31: 1.

† *Bangor Daily News*, Feb. 28, 1905.

Bryce M. Patten. To niece Libby C. Patten of Little Rock, Arkansas. To Weston S. Patten, my brother's son. Executor: William E. Graves.*

- vi. RACHEL CAROLINE, b. Sept. 14, 1811; d. at Passadunkeag, where she was living with her aunt Mrs. Shannon, Jan. 24, 1834, aged twenty-two.†
- vii. BRYCE McLELLAN, b. March 1, 1814; Monmouth Academy; Bowdoin College, A.B. 1837, A.M. 1840; m. (1) in Brunswick in 1850 Mary Earle, who d. *s.p.*; m. (2) in 1870 Josephine Burns of Chariton, Iowa, who d. Nov. 27, 1908, at the home of her daughter, Mrs. Sparling, in Fort Worth, Texas; he d. March 15, 1891, in Farmington, Iowa.

While in college he taught in Union Academy in Wells and after graduation from Bowdoin in Covington, Kentucky, until 1839 when he settled in Louisville and soon commenced, at his own expense and with great success, to teach classes of blind pupils. As a result of this experiment, the Kentucky State Institution for the Blind was established and Mr. Patten was its superintendent for twenty-nine years, also acting as managing director of the American Printing House for the Blind. After retiring in 1871, he travelled and lectured for a few years and eventually settled on a farm in Bentonsport, Iowa. He was not temperamentally fitted to be a successful farmer, however, and about 1883 he moved to Farmington, Iowa, his home until his death.

Children:

1. *Bryce Earl*, b. March 28, 1872, in Vermont; m. (1) in St. Louis, Missouri, in 1901, Georgia Fisher, from whom he was separated by divorce in 1908; m. (2) in Cincinnati, Ohio, March 11, 1911, Jennie Farquer; living in Arlington, Virginia (1940).
 2. *Ida Belle*, b. Oct. 1, 1877, in Lincoln, Nebraska; m. in Little Rock, Arkansas, Dec. 9, 1896, Hugh Alfred Sparling of Toronto, Canada; three children, born in Little Rock, Edward Earl Sparling (Nov. 23, 1898), Hugh Alfred Sparling (Nov. 9, 1903), Jo Orlean Louise Sparling (May 28, 1907).
 3. *Helena May* (called Lenamay); b. May 28, 1879, in Bentonsport, Iowa; d. April, 1884, in Farmington, Iowa.
 4. *Lela Jo*, b. Dec. 14, 1885, at Farmington, Iowa; m. April 1905, Raine Ewell of New York City, from whom she was separated by divorce; m. (2) William Weber of San Francisco; children, born in New York, Lois Ewell (July 16, 1908), Raine McLellan Ewell (July 17, 1910).
- viii. THOMAS WILSON, b. Aug. 14, 1816; d. unmarried April 7, 1858, at Fort Oak, Texas.
 - ix. ELIZA SWETT, b. Feb. 12, 1821; d. unmarried June 25, 1893, at Topsham. Her will was made June 17, 1893. To her nephew Bryce M. Patten, his wife Martha W. Patten, their daughter Anna W. Patten and their son Ralph J. Patten. She mentioned a legacy from her brother Otis Patten, late of Little Rock, Arkansas.‡
 - x. OTIS, b. May 11, 1821; m. Dec. 29, 1849, Susan C. Hunter McMillen; d. April 14, 1893, in Albuquerque, New Mexico, at the home of his daughter Mrs. Bryan. After serving as assistant to his brother Bryce in the Kentucky School for the Blind, he was appointed

* Sagadahoc Probate.

† Gravestone at Passadunkeag.

‡ Sagadahoc Probate.

superintendent of the Arkansas School for the Blind at Arkadelphia on Dec. 1, 1859, shortly after its establishment, and held the position until March 25, 1885, the institution having been moved to Little Rock. Portraits of Mr. Patten and his wife, who acted as matron, now hang in the school hall. For many years he brought his family back to his old home in Topsham for their summer holidays, and he is still remembered there.

Children:

1. *Anna*; d. unmarried.
 2. *Madelaine Hunter*; m. Arthur C. Sloan at Albuquerque, New Mexico, Nov. 6, 1883; d. *s.p.*
 3. *Susannah Hunter*; m. R. W. D. Bryan at Albuquerque Sept. 19, 1883. Three sons, Kirk Bryan of the Harvard University faculty, Hugh McLellan Bryan of Salt Lake City and George Steinman Bryan of Albuquerque are now (1940) living.
 4. *Elizabeth C. (Libbie)*; m. Edward W. Dobson at Albuquerque Sept. 15, 1886. A son, Chester Dobson of Los Lunas, New Mexico, and a daughter, Susanna (Dobson) Cavender, are now (1940) living.
 5. *William McMillen*, b. Sept. 13, 1856, probably at Logansport, Indiana; m. Nov. 15, 1882, Lelia Nott, who d. Sept. 30, 1931; d. Feb. 1, 1935, at Little Rock where he had spent his life. A daughter, Anna V. Patten, b. March 1, 1886, d. unmarried Jan. 29, 1935. A son, Gordon Nott Patten, b. Nov. 5, 1883, m. June 17, 1908, Pearle Ophelia Puryear and lives in Minneapolis, Minnesota.
- xi. CHARLES TATE, b. March 5, 1824; m. Nov. 29, 1860, Cynthia Jane Curtis of Bowdoinham who d. July 6, 1908; d. Feb. 22, 1898. He remained in Topsham on his father's farm and served the town as selectman.

Children, born in Topsham:

1. *Alice Smith*, b. April 28, 1861; d. unmarried Jan. 19, 1900.
2. *Charles Actor*, b. Feb. 4, 1863; m. Oct. 9, 1895, Georgia Bryant; a son, Bryant McLellan, was b. Feb. 8, 1902.
3. *George Amory*, b. Sept. 3, 1867; m. June 14, 1905, Florence Smalley.
4. *Edwin Curtis*, b. Nov. 17, 1872; m. June 29, 1901, Sarah Millward Gowell. Children: Clyde Gowell, b. May 15, 1902; Leon Edwin, b. June 15, 1905, and d. April 6, 1906; Cynthia Madelyn, b. June 12, 1907.

7. LIEUT. ROBERT² PATTEN (*Actor*,² *Robert*¹) was born in Topsham about 1777. The family deed of 1835, which gives his residence as China, disproves the theory that Robert Patten of Litchfield was the son of Actor Patten of Topsham. He married June 30, 1806, Phebe Ricker of Poland, who died November 12, 1863, aged seventy-five years, six months. He died February 12, 1867, aged ninety-one years, six months, seven days. They are buried in the Branch Mills Graveyard, China.

In 1815 Robert Patten, Jr., of Topsham bought sixty acres of land, buildings and one-quarter of a grist-mill and other mill

rights on the western branch of the Sheepscot River in Harlem (later China) from Ephraim Jones, and immediately mortgaged the property to Thomas L. Winthrop of Boston.* During the next ten years he bought and sold other shares in the Jones mill and other water rights.† Owing to the loss by fire of the China town records, little can be learned of his family and life:

Children, presumably born in China :

- i. RUFUS; d. July 26, 1820, aged 12 years, 11 months (gravestone).
- ii. MARY A.; m. after 1850 Joseph Jacobs; d. May 3, 1882, aged 72 years, 9 months, 26 days (gravestone).
- iii. ARA C., b. about 1813; m. before 1850 Paulina —. He was a manufacturer of cloth in China but failed financially and moved away before 1860 when he was practising law in Sheboygan Falls, Wisconsin. In 1870, when he was a lawyer in Hudson in the same state, the census gave his age as fifty-seven and that of his wife Paulina as forty-six. She was living in Medford, Wisconsin, in 1899.

Children, born in China :

1. *Loreda*, b. about 1846; m. before 1870 Philip Rickman.
2. *Laosta*, b. about 1850; m. — Kelly before 1870 when she was living with her parents, without her husband.
- iv. ARIGAIL T., aged 28 in 1850.
- v. ELIZABETH B.; m. after 1850 Henry T. Perkins; d. Feb. 23, 1854, aged 31 (gravestone).
- vi. PHEBE D., b. July 21, 1827; a legatee of her aunt Rachel Patten; d. March 2, 1899 (gravestone); her will, "of Augusta," left her entire estate to Paulina Patten of Medford, Wisconsin.

8. CAPT. HUGH³ PATTEN (*Actor*,² *Robert*¹) was born in Topsham July 29, 1789. He married in Topsham January 27, 1818, Lucy Green, who was born in Bow, New Hampshire, May 4, 1793.

Capt. Patten's service at sea was apparently on vessels not hailing from the Kennebec district as his name does not appear on the Bath shipping records. In 1850 he and his family were listed in the census as living in Phippsburg.

Hugh Patten died February 18, 1860 (gravestone), and was buried in Topsham. Lucy Patten died March 4, 1879, aged eighty-five (gravestone), or eighty-six (newspaper). Edward Beaumont, who had married a Green, was appointed administrator of her estate, her heirs-at-law being Charles W. Patten of San Francisco, Adelia L. Loring of Eldora, Iowa, Elizabeth J. Patten of Topsham, Fannie E. Rogers of Woburn, Massachusetts, and Lucy Gahan of Phippsburg.

* Kennebec Deeds, 24: 101; 22: 356.

† Kennebec Deeds, 29: 298; 31: 297; 52: 268; 54: 391.

Children, all recorded in Brunswick:

- i. CHARLES WILLIAM, b. Nov. 29, 1818, in Topsham. In 1879, when his mother died, he was living in San Francisco but a thorough search of what remains of San Francisco sources produces little about him. His name appears in city directories from 1875 to 1887, his occupation being given as manufacturer's agent, assayer and "mining."
- ii. ABIGAIL AUGUSTA, b. Oct. 5, 1820, in Topsham; m. in Phippsburg Dec. 31, 1846, Col. Thomas Oliver; d. *s.p.* before 1879.
- iii. ABELIA L., b. March 18, 1824; m. in Phippsburg, int. Feb. 22, 1845, Rev. Asa S. Loring; of Eldora, Iowa, in 1879.
- iv. FRANCIS A., b. July 5, 1826; m. before 1850 Capt. Andrew T. Percy of Phippsburg; named in the will of her aunt Rachel Patten in 1864; d. Jan. 23, 1867, in Phippsburg; her two daughters Fannie E. (m., int. Dec. 14, 1866, Oliver Parker Rogers) and Lucy J. (m., int. Nov. 2, 1870, Anthony B. Gahan) were among her mother's heirs.
- v. SARAH M., b. June 25, 1828; d. in Phippsburg Aug. 14, 1857, aged 29.
- vi. ELIZABETH J., b. Nov. 10, 1830; of Topsham, unmarried, in 1879.
- vii. JAMES McKEEN, b. June 10, 1833; d. in Phippsburg Nov. 2, 1844, aged 11 years, 6 months.
- viii. CAPT. ROGERS G., b. April 22, 1836; captain of the ship *Prussia* of Bath, 1212 tons, owned by Houghton Brothers, in 1868; d. Feb. 8, 1874, aged 37.
- ix. MARY C. G., b. May 28, 1838; d. in Phippsburg June 26, 1838, aged 28 days.

9. CAPT. WILLIAM³ PATTEN (*Actor*,² *Robert*¹) was born in Topsham September 20, 1793. He married in Topsham September 26, 1824, Pauline Patten (*Thomas*,³ *John*,² *Hector*¹), who died in Havana, Cuba, December 12, 1826,* apparently while on a voyage with her husband. His second wife was Hannah Huntington, daughter of Dr. Huntington of Bowdoinham, who died January, 1835, aged about thirty-five. He married, third, September 8, 1835, Eliza (Tallman) Smith, daughter of Capt. Peleg Tallman, a prominent Bath capitalist and ship-builder, and widow of Capt. Horatio Smith. She died in Philadelphia February 25, 1863. In 1867 he married, fourth, Carrie Lehman, in Philadelphia. He died in Philadelphia August 15, 1871.

Capt. Patten followed the sea during his early manhood, and rose to the command of vessels. His voyages took him to the Gulf of Mexico, then infested by pirates. On one occasion his vessel was boarded by the notorious corsair, Jean Lafitte, who took a supply of provisions, freely turned over to him, and departed, without having searched for money, a considerable amount of which had been hidden among the ballast when the pirate was seen approaching.† In all probability he was the Capt. William Patten who commanded this Kennebec vessel:

1825 brig *George*, 251 tons, G. F. Patten, owner

* *Christian Mirror*, Jan. 19, 1827.

† See *Peleg Tallman*, by William M. Emery.

After the marriage of Captain Patten and Mrs. Smith, they lived about two years in Bath; then on the thousand acre farm, given her by her father, until 1846, when they moved to Richmond village. He had already become engaged in ship-building, and among the vessels built and owned by him, and after 1850 by Patten & Sturtevant, were

1845	bark <i>Globe</i> , 366 tons, Capt. William Purrington
1847	ship <i>Medallion</i> , 547 tons, Capt. F. Houdlette
1847	brig <i>Zeno</i> , 221 tons, Capt. S. B. Dinsmore
1848	ship <i>William Patten</i> , 608 tons, Capt. William Decker
1850	bark <i>Glenburn</i> , 455 tons, Capt. H. Q. Sampson
1852	ship <i>Hydra</i> , 499 tons, Capt. James Lunt
1854	ship <i>Therese</i> , 899 tons, Capt. James Lunt

He was director of the Lincoln Bank of Bath, and president and a director of the Richmond Bank. He was Representative to the Legislature in 1856. In the latter part of 1850, he and Captain William H. Sturtevant entered into partnership, under the firm name of Patten & Sturtevant, and engaged in general trade, carrying on at the same time a ship-building business. In July, 1857, Captain Patten became financially embarrassed, and went to Brooklyn, N. Y., from which city he removed to Philadelphia in November of the same year, where he resided until his death. The business of Patten & Sturtevant was closed up by the junior partner and the firm was dissolved in 1858.

Eliza (Tallman) Patten made her will June 15, 1861, leaving her estate to her son and daughters by her first marriage (William Henry Smith, Ellen C. T. Sturtevant and Elizabeth S. Larrabee), her daughter-in-law Almira Smith, and her three Patten daughters, Hannah P. Darrah, Rachel J. Elwell and Ann M. T. Patten. Her brother Benjamin F. Tallman and son William H. Smith of Richmond were named executors.

Child, by first wife:

- i. ANN MARY, bapt. July 6, 1825, by the minister of the Winter Street church in Bath; d. in infancy, July 13, 1825.

Children, by third wife:

- ii. HANNAH PAULINE, b. June 28, 1836, in Bath; m. (1) in London, England, March 14, 1854, Capt. Frederick Theobald Hatch who d. at sea Dec., 1854; m. (2) in Richmond Jan. 29, 1857, John Conc Darrah; m. (3) in Delanco, N. J., Sept. 17, 1890, Capt. Henry L. Gregg; d. in Delanco May 9, 1904.

- iii. RACHEL JANE, b. April 27, 1838, in Richmond; m. in Richmond Jan. 29, 1857, Capt. Joseph Sprague Elwell; d. in Philadelphia May 27, 1932.
- iv. ANN MARIA THERESA, b. Aug. 11, 1840, in Richmond; Charles W. Larrabee was appointed her guardian in Feb., 1857; m. in Philadelphia Nov. 12, 1868, Col. James Beattie Roney, University of Pennsylvania 1859; d. in Delanco, N. J., Aug. 9, 1910.

10. ROBERT³ PATTEN (*Robert*,² *Robert*¹) was born in Arundel March 14, 1769. He married Mary Jack, daughter of Andrew and Fannie (Merryman) Jack of Litchfield, May 1, 1798. He died in Litchfield December 7, 1842, and his widow survived until September 16, 1857.*

Patten's first recorded purchase in Litchfield was a quarter interest in Nickerson's saw-mill in 1808,† the forerunner of a long list of lands and mill shares which he acquired in Litchfield and Bowdoinham. His real estate dealings seem to have been profitable and his position in the community is evidenced by the "Esq." which generally follows his name in the records.

His will, dated January 29, 1842, and proved January 7, 1843, left to his wife Mary \$1,000, and one-third of his real estate and household goods. Each of his sons Andrew, Robert, Seth, John and Samuel received \$1,500, and his two daughters, Fanny Stinson and Mary Jack, shared the remaining household furniture. Executors: Moses Dennett of Bowdoin, Samuel Patten. The inventory came to \$20,299.79.‡

Children, born in Litchfield:

- i. ANDREW JACK, b. May 13, 1794; m. March 28, 1821, Mary Laughlin who d. June 16, 1886; d. at New Harmony, Ohio, February 25, 1872. He was a teacher and farmer in Williamsburg, Ohio, and was prominent in the Masonic Order, being secretary of the local lodge from 1825 to 1837 and master for seven terms from 1842 to 1851. In the final account of the administrator of his estate, Sylvanus Patten, his widow Mary is named and his children Sylvanus, Granville, Serena Pool and Harriet Henning.

Children:

- 1. *Sylvanus Actor*, by 1822; m. Ellen — who d. in 1899; d. in 1901. He served for a year in the 48th Ohio Volunteer Infantry regiment during the Civil War. He had one son, Clayton, and three daughters.

* Mr. Sinnett and Mr. Moore both identified Robert Patten of Litchfield with ROBERT³ (*John*,² *Hector*¹), but the family deed signed by all of John² Patten's surviving children in 1835 proves conclusively that John's son Robert was he who settled in China. In his letter of 1853 John Patten of Topsham stated that Robert of Litchfield was a son of the first Robert of Arundel, but this was not so, Robert² (*Robert*¹)'s life being fully documented in his native town. There can be no doubt, however, that he was a grandson of Robert, the Arundel emigrant, his father being the Robert of the second generation with whom his Topsham cousin confused him.

† Lincoln Deeds, 70: 68.

‡ Kennebec Probate.

2. *Granville*, b. 1827; m. Mary — who d. in 1895; d. in 1896. He also served in the Civil War in the same regiment as his brother. He was a trustee of Pike County 1860-1861. He had five sons, John, Randolph, Andrew, Charles and Clifford.
 3. *Serena*; m. — Pool
 4. *Mary*; not mentioned in administrator's account.
 5. *Elizabeth*; not mentioned in administrator's account.
 6. *Harriet*; m. — Henning.
- ii. FANNIE, b. April 5, 1796; m. Rev. Robert Stinson about 1817.
- iii. SETH, b. Aug. 17, 1798; d. Sept. 5, 1802.
- iv. ROBERT, b. Nov. 20, 1800; m. Oct. 30, 1828, Sally Brown, who d. in Gardiner Dec. 24, 1876, aged 75; he d. in Gardiner Dec. 11, 1882, aged 82. He taught school in Litchfield and was chairman of the board of the Litchfield Institute.

Children :

1. *Miranda A.*, b. March 7, 1829; m. (1) May 8, 1853, Samuel H. Toothaker; m. (2) in Gardiner Jan. 29, 1860, Henry Richardson; m. (3), int. Oct. 11, 1862, in Gardiner, Edmund N. Davis; d. April 22, 1893.
 2. *Mary E.*, b. June 14, 1833; m. Moulton Page.
- v. MARY, b. April 17, 1803; m. Thomas Jack Oct. 25, 1829.
- vi. CAPT. SAMUEL, b. Aug. 5, 1806; m. Dec. 2, 1830, Mary Jack of Lisbon; d. Jan. 22, 1891, at Litchfield where he lived in his father's homestead; she d. Aug. 15, 1879.

Children, born in Litchfield :

1. *Lusilla Augusta Chamberlain*, b. Sept. 20, 1832; m. Russell S. Niles.
 2. *Robert Franklin*, b. March 10, 1840; m. Almira H. Mitchell.
 3. *Samuel Orator*, b. April 13, 1845; m. H. Floretta Buker, int. July 20, 1881.
- vii. SETH, b. Oct. 3, 1809; m. (1) in Lisbon April 25, 1833, Bethia Cowing, who d. April 4, 1848; m. (2) at Bowdoin, Jan. 3, 1850, Jane Hall, who d. Aug. 23, 1852; m. (3) in Durham May 29, 1853, Rebecca Stevens, who d. April 19, 1907. Seth Patten d. Aug. 21, 1895, in Lisbon.

Children, by first wife, born in Lisbon :

1. *Diana S.*, b. July 11, 1834; d. Aug. 29, 1846.
2. *Robert*, b. July 17, 1836; d. Jan. 9, 1861.
3. *Drusilla*, b. June 2, 1840; m. Aug. 9, 1864, John C. Bryant of Webster; d. Aug. 12, 1912.
4. *Clarissa E.*, b. July 12, 1842; d. Aug. 31, 1859.
5. *Adrianna G.*, b. July 23, 1846; d. Jan. 17, 1867.

By second wife :

6. *Martin H.*, b. Nov. 25, 1851; d. April 10, 1852.
- viii. CAPT. JOHN, b. Jan. 22, 1815; m. March 21, 1841, Caroline Odiorne; d. Jan. 2, 1894. He lived on a part of his father's land in Litchfield.

Child, born in Litchfield :

1. *Mary E.*, b. Oct. 14, 1843; m. John Purington.

11. WILLIAM² PATTEN (*Robert,² *Robert*¹) was baptized in Arundel April 26, 1786. He married, intention December 8, 1821, Susan Currier who died less than a year later, in October, 1822, aged thirty-one. In the *Kennebunk Gazette* of October 26, 1822, appears an obituary paying tribute to her kindness and aid to the unfortunate, particularly to the sick. "This disposition to do good 'grew with her growth and strengthened with her strength.'" His second wife was Isabella Smith of Hollis, their intention to marry being dated January 8, 1825.*

Patten died in Kennebunkport, as Arundel had been newly named, on November 24, 1841, aged fifty-five. A short obituary in *The Maine Democrat* (Saco) states that William Patten, Esq., formerly represented Kennebunkport in the State Legislature and was much respected. His widow and three sisters having declined the trust, his nephew Edmund Currier, Jr., was appointed administrator of his estate.* The four children, all under fourteen years of age, were placed under the guardianship of their mother, Isabella Patten, August 17, 1843.†

The census of 1850 shows Isabella Patten as the head of a very feminine household, the sole male being her son William, aged nineteen. With her were living her husband's three sisters, Mrs. Stone, aged seventy-nine, Abigail Patten, aged seventy-five, and Mary Patten, aged sixty-five. Her oldest daughter had married in 1850, but two younger ones were listed, Olive and Sarah.

Isabella Patten died March 31, 1879, aged eighty-one years, two months.

Children, born in Kennebunkport:

- i. SUSAN CURRIER, b. about 1829; m., int. July 8, 1850, Samuel H. Underwood of Saco.
- ii. WILLIAM J., b. about 1831; m. Jan. 2, 1859, Lucretia S. Hill of Kennebunk who must have died very soon as at his death on September 15, 1861, he left neither widow nor issue, as his mother stated when she asked that Joseph Dam be appointed administrator.‡ Hartley Patten, an infant who d. in 1859, was their only child.
- iii. OLIVE S., b. about 1834; m. Dec. 25, 1856, William Hancock of Kennebunk.
- iv. SARAH A., b. Jan. 1840; d. March 16, 1860, aged 20 years, 2 months, at the home of her sister Mrs. Hancock, of consumption.

12. ROBERT³ PATTEN (*James,² *Robert*¹) was baptized in Arundel November 10, 1776. He married in Wells (second parish) Jan. 24, 1802, Lydia Emery, daughter of Isaac Emery, a merchant and importer, of Kennebunk. She was born March 6, 1784. In the*

* York Probate, No. 14633.

† York Probate, No. 14630.

‡ York Probate, No. 14635.

December 19, 1812, number of the *Kennebunk Weekly Visitor* Robert Patten advertised as follows: "Notice. Whereas Lydia, wife of the subscriber, has totally disregarded the conjugal vows, has forfeited every claim to friendship and protection which a husband ought to have; I do hereby forbid all persons trusting and harbouring her. Kennebunk, Dec. 11, 1812. Robert Patten, jr." In the May term of the supreme court, 1813, he applied for a divorce, through his attorney George Wallingford, and his wife contested the libel, her attorney being the distinguished Maine lawyer John Holmes. The justices decided that Patten's charges were fully and satisfactorily proved and the divorce was granted. Under her maiden name, Lydia Emery, she married, intention May 21, 1815, Johnson Stevens, who had been named in Patten's suit. She died August 25, 1862.

On November 23, 1818, at Wells, Capt. Robert Patten and Mrs. Jane Hooper were married. She was a daughter of Joseph Hobbs of Wells and widow of Loammi Hooper. Her death, at the residence of her father on June 29, 1832, is recorded in the *Kennebunk Gazette*, but her gravestone, in her father's lot, states that she died June 8, 1832, aged 41 years, 4 months.

In the *Kennebunk Gazette*, of September 22, 1832, appeared the following advertisement: "Auction Sale. Will be sold without reserve to the highest bidder, on Saturday, the 13th day of October next, that elegant establishment, containing nine acres of land, situated within a short distance of Kennebunk village, on the road leading to Saco, lately occupied by Mrs. Patten, as a Tavern stand for which it is well calculated. The buildings are in good repair and ready for occupants. Conditions made known at the sale. Kennebunk, Sept. 12, 1832."

Robert Patten was master of the snow *President Jefferson*, 188 tons, in 1803, of the new schooner *Paulina*, 113 tons, in 1811, of the brig *Alliance* from 1816 to 1821 and of the brig *Ferox* in 1821. During these years he was engaged in trade between his home port of Kennebunkport and the West Indies, principally Port-au-Prince, Haiti, and the local newspapers record his arrivals with cargoes of coffee and log-wood. Later he made longer voyages to China and the East Indies. He does not seem to have been successful financially and executions against his property were common in 1814-1815 and in 1826-1827. Eventually he left Maine permanently, possibly by 1829 when Jane Patten, wife of Robert Patten, formerly of Kennebunk, mariner, quitclaimed to Dr. Jacob Fisher nine acres of woodland in Kennebunkport, levied upon to satisfy an execution against her husband in favor

of Nathaniel Goodwin and deeded by Goodwin to Dr. Fisher.*
 Capt. Patten spent his old age in Australia.

There were no children by either marriage.

13. JOHNSON³ PATTEN (*James,² *Robert*¹) was baptized in Arundel September 1, 1782. He married June 4, 1809, Lucy Towne, daughter of Lieut. Amos and Sarah (Miller) Towne.*

As a young man he went to sea with his brother Robert, whom he served as mate on voyages to the West Indies, but in 1810, soon after his marriage, he bought from his aunt Mary Wilson of Topsham the twenty acres in Arundel which she had obtained by her father's will and took up a farmer's life.† He built a house nearly opposite the John Lord house, but about 1820 sold the property to Joshua ("Long Josh") Nason, and bought land of Capt. Clement Lord and built the house in which he lived for the rest of his life.

Johnson Patten died June 1, 1848, aged sixty-six. Six days before his death he had conveyed his homestead farm to his son James who deeded it on September 11, 1848, to his brother John and his brother-in-law Joseph Hardy. On the same day they transferred it to Lucy Patten, widow, and she in turn sold it to Daniel Nason. The widow died in Saco, where she had spent her last years with her daughter Lucy, on October 15, 1862, aged seventy-two.

Children, born in Kennebunkport:

1. SARAH STONE, b. Dec. 11, 1809; m. Nov. 11, 1828, Hiram Sands of Lyman who was b. July 15, 1805, and d. Oct. 21, 1884, aged 79; she d. Jan. 2, 1879, at Somerville, Mass. Sands was originally an inn-keeper, later a brick manufacturer which brought him prosperity before the Civil War. For the federal government he supervised the construction of Fort Smith, Arkansas, in 1840. As the birth records of his children show, he lived in many places in Maine, Arkansas and Massachusetts.

Children:

1. *Elizabeth Sands*, b. Oct. 10, 1829, in Lyman; m. Nov. 12, 1850, in Cambridge, Levi Perkins. Three children: Arthur Perkins, Carrie Perkins and Etta Perkins (Mrs. Austin).
2. *Harriet N. Sands*, b. Feb. 23, 1831, in St. Albans, Me.; m. April 19, 1862, in Cambridge, Stephen D. Fowler. One daughter, Mary Louise Fowler, who m. (1) Benjamin Kingsbury and (2) Albert M. Fowle, and has one son, Stanley M. Kingsbury, of Weston, Mass.
3. *Thomas Sands*, b. July 5, 1832, in St. Albans; m. (1) Elizabeth C. Johnson; m. (2) Oct. 6, 1890, Mrs. Elizabeth M. Russell; lived in Nashua, N. H., of which city he was mayor in 1894. He engaged in many manufacturing enterprises, and as an inventor he had to his

* York Deeds, 136: 74.

† York Deeds, 104: 109.

credit the roller-skate, a brickmaking machine, a type of pipe-organ, a spring needle for making hosiery and the White Mountain ice-cream freezer. By his first wife he had a daughter, Elizabeth I. Sands (Mrs. Ernest A. Morgan).

4. *Lucy Patten Sands*, b. March 25, 1834, in Bangor; d. young.
 5. *Sarah Jane Sands*, b. Dec. 23, 1836, in Bangor; d. young.
 6. *George M. Sands*, b. Dec. 23 (*sic*), 1837, in Bangor; d. young.
 7. *Sarah C. Sands*, b. June 26, 1840, in Fort Smith, Arkansas; m. (1) Augustus Hatch who d. in 1867; m. (2) Feb. 10, 1881, William Langdon Libbey of Boston; d. in Boston Aug. 20, 1925, *s.p.*
 8. *Orin Sands*, b. Oct. 28, 1842, in Limerick, Me.; d. young.
 9. *George H. Sands*, b. Aug. 6, 1844, in Cambridge, Mass.; m. in 1868 Kate Mills. One daughter, Alice Josephine Sands, m. Albert Blaikie and has two sons.
 10. *Josephine M. Sands*, b. June 6, 1846, in Cambridge; m. in Chelsea Nov. 30, 1871, Edward McLellan; d. in Marion, Mass., Aug. 5, 1925. Children: Grace Josephine McLellan (b. Feb. 6, 1880; m. Feb. 11, 1902, Henry Frederick Lesh; lives in Pinehurst, No. Carolina, and Marion, Mass.), Ernest Cleveland McLellan (d. in infancy), Ralph M. McLellan (b. Feb. 6, 1885; m. in Chicago, Ill., Margaret Mather Hunt; d. July, 1933, at Newton Highlands, Mass., leaving one daughter, Grace Josephine), and Edward Carleton McLellan (b. July 16, 1890; m. Edna A. Smith; d. Oct., 1935, in West Newton, leaving four sons, Edward Robert, David S., Richard A. and William.)
 11. *Charles W. Sands*, b. May 3, 1848, in Cambridge; by his third marriage, with Laura M. Jones, he had a daughter, Hazel (Sands) Welch, of Newtonville.
16. ii. JOHN TOWNE, b. Oct. 19, 1812.
 iii. LUCY, b. Nov. 13, 1814; m. Nov. 22, 1836, Joseph Hardy who d. June 8, 1880, aged 72; she d. March 21, 1893, in Saco. Mr. Hardy was born in Warner, N. H., Jan. 1, 1808. He was for twenty-seven years an overseer in the York Mills, and was inspector of U. S. Customs 1861-1867.

Children :

1. *Josephine Maria Hardy*, b. Sept. 10, 1839; d. May 20, 1845.
 2. *Emma L. Hardy*, b. Feb. 5, 1844; m., int. Oct. 14, 1865, Capt. William E. Nason who d. April 29, 1888; she d. in Saco Oct. 19, 1896. One daughter, Ella Maude (m. Oct. 25, 1888, Henry Albert Hewes of Saco), and two sons who d. in infancy, Clarence H. (b. July 24, d. Aug. 17, 1867) and Guy Edward (b. Feb. 10, d. Nov. 9, 1873).
17. iv. JAMES DORRANCE, b. Aug. 26, 1817.
 v. JANE MERRILL, b. March 31, 1821; m. April 10, 1842, Asa Waldo Wildes of Newburyport; d. in Skowhegan May 1, 1877.

Children :

1. *Francis Chase*, b. Feb. 1, 1846, in Northfield, Vt.; d. Sept. 17, 1849, in Waterville, Me.
2. *George Lunt*, b. Nov. 1, 1847; m. June 26, 1877, Elizabeth Neal Gilman of Skowhegan.

3. *William Henry*, b. Sept. 6, 1850; m. Nov. 25, 1874, Abbie Keene of Caanan.
4. *Annie Waldo*, b. Sept. 17, 1856; m. (1) Oct. 17, 1876, Charles Douglas Whitehouse of Augusta; m. (2) Henry Norman James, in Denver, Colorado.
5. *Mary Howard*, b. Oct. 9, 1859; m. Dec. 8, 1880, Walter Goodwin Davis of Portland.

18. vi. ROBERT, b. Feb. 13, 1823.
19. vii. CHARLES EDWARD, b. Oct. 11, 1828.
20. viii. ALBERT GALLATIN NASON, b. Jan. 6, 1831.

14. DANIEL³ PATTEN (*James*,² *Robert*¹) was born in Arundel July 26, 1792. He married, int. Jan. 10, 1818, Phoebe Adams, daughter of Joseph and Priscilla Adams. She died February 25, 1856. He died March 22, 1871. They are buried in the Hobbs graveyard in Waterboro.

On February 12, 1834, he bought from Jacob Smith, Jr., a farm of one hundred and twenty acres in Waterboro, moved there with his family and lived thereon until his death.

Children:

- i. JOSEPH ADAMS, b. Sept. 29, 1818; m. Aug. 23, 1847, Mary Antoinette Bixby who was b. Oct. 29, 1826, in Tunbridge, Vt., and d. Feb. 9, 1906. He lived in Lowell, Mass., where he was a factory superintendent, and where he d. Jan. 27, 1897.

Children, born in Lowell:

1. *Marie Antoinette*, b. April 29, 1848; d. July 6, 1849.
2. *Marcellus Adams*, b. Dec. 3, 1849; m. Aug. 3, 1875, Susan Genevieve Allen; d. Dec. 5, 1921. Besides two sons who d. at birth, they had Wilbur Allen Patten (b. Sept. 5, 1879; m. Sept. 26, 1904, Bertha Louise Lee) and Harold Joseph Patten (b. May 27, 1884).
3. *Frank James*, b. March 14, 1852; d. July 6, 1854.
- ii. ABIGAIL MESERVY, b. Oct. 25, 1821; m. Aug. 30, 1843, Ivory Walker of Waterboro; d. Sept. 11, 1899.
- iii. LYDIA, b. Oct. 15, 1823; m. March 4, 1855, as his second wife, Euran Hamilton Hobbs of Waterboro, who d. Aug. 12, 1881; d. May 10, 1902.
- iv. JAMES, b. March 21, 1826; d. March 14, 1848.
- v. WILLIAM, b. March 13, 1829; m. Nancy Worster of Belfast; d. June 6, 1860. In the 1850 census he is listed as a manufacturer. His widow m. John Emery of Waterboro, April 6, 1861.

Children:

1. *George Willis*, b. in 1854; m. Frances Martin of Lowell, Mass.; d. in 1906. They had one son, Percival Francis Patten, who was b. in Lowell Dec. 26, 1881, m. April 13, 1917, Julia Ann Devine, and is now (1941) Lieut.-Commander (S C), U S N (retired).
2. *Ella*; m. George H. Emery of Shapleigh, Aug. 19, 1878.
- vi. PRISCILLA JEFFERY, b. Feb. 12, 1836; m. Feb. 23, 1862, Harmon Kimball; d. May 23, 1916.

15. JAMES³ PATTEN (*James,*² *Robert*¹) was born in Arundel July 3, 1795. He married, intention May 20, 1820, Olive H. Bickford who was born July 19, 1795, a daughter of Persia Bickford. He married, second, intention November 25, 1846, Jane Wentworth of Biddeford who was born December 25, 1796, and died in Buxton September 25, 1891, aged ninety-four years. Patten was a farmer and carpenter, living in Kennebunkport.

Children, born in Kennebunkport:

- i. DAVID F., b. Aug. 11, 1821; m. Nov. 26, 1848, Sarah A. Smith; d. June 17, 1901, in Biddeford, where he had been a farmer; she d. May 11, 1908, in Greeley, Colorado.

Children:

1. *Ella Frances*, b. Feb., 1850; m. Nov. 29, 1866, James Orrin Benson of Biddeford, who d. there May 8, 1900; she d. in Neponset, Mass. Two children.
2. *Mary Olive*, b. July 7, 1852; m. Jan. 25, 1878, James H. Tarbox of Biddeford, who d. Feb. 13, 1930; she d. Sept. 30, 1928. One son and three daughters.
3. *Daniel Wentworth*; d. in Kennebunkport Oct. 23, 1857, aged 4 years, 3 months, 12 days.
4. *Annie Sarah*; m. in Biddeford Dec. 4, 1890, Frank W. Wherron; lived in Greeley, Colorado. Two sons and one daughter.
- 5 and 6. *Twin sons* who d. young.
- ii. ELIZABETH, b. July 29, 1823; m., int. Oct. 24, 1846, Thomas Smith, a brother of David F. Patten's wife.
- iii. MARY ANN, b. Oct. 11, 1825; m., int. Sept. 20, 1845, William Smith of Saco.
- iv. JULIA, b. April 8, 1830; m. June 15, 1857, William Lord of Kennebunkport.

16. JOHN TOWNE⁴ PATTEN (*Johnson,*³ *James,*² *Robert*¹) was born in Arundel October 19, 1812. He married Sarah Smith who was born in New Hampshire and died in Biddeford July 7, 1888, from burns received through falling down stairs while carrying a lighted lamp.* He died in Biddeford April 24, 1888.

Listed in the 1850 census as a manufacturer, he was employed in the York mills in Saco.

On February 6, 1877, Mr. and Mrs. Patten adopted their two grandchildren, Lucy M. and Addia J. Stubbs, daughters of their deceased daughter Lucy A. (Patten) Stubbs.† Lucy M. Patten, one of these girls, is the Minnie L. Patten, her given names reversed, who died in Biddeford May 19, 1889, aged twenty-two. The other, Addia J. Patten, asked that administration on Patten's small estate be granted to Edwin J. Cram of Biddeford in

* *Biddeford Journal*, July 7, 1888.

† York Probate, No. 18286.

1889,* and died in Boston October 5, 1899, unmarried. Her will left all of her property to William G. Parker and Orrilla E. Parker, his wife, "they always having been kind to me."†

Children :

- i. LUCY A., b. June, 1842; m. Aug. 19, 1866, Henry H. Stubbs of Saco. They were divorced upon his petition on Oct. 4, 1869, and she assumed her maiden name. She d. in Biddeford Jan. 16, 1877. Her two daughters, Lucy M., born Nov. 22, 1866, and Addia J., born Feb. 14, 1869, were adopted by their Patten grandparents.
- ii. ALBERT GALLATIN, b. Aug. 13, 1844; d. Sept. 6, 1846.
- iii. ALBERT GALLATIN, b. Nov. 7, 1847; d. Aug. 13, 1848.
- iv. GEORGE H., b. Sept. 9, 1853; d. May 9, 1854.

17. JAMES DORRANCE⁴ PATTEN (*Johnson,³ James,² Robert¹*) was born in Kennebunkport August 26, 1817. He married on April 15, 1840, Mary Jane Ware, daughter of Charles and Rebecca Stanwood (Wells) Ware, of Gardiner. He died October 7, 1865, in Saco. She survived until February 8, 1889, aged sixty-eight.

He was educated at Kent's Hill Academy, and began his business life as a builder and contractor in Saco. In 1847 he decided to become a minister of the Methodist-Episcopalian faith and entered the Concord Biblical Institute to prepare himself. Ill health caused him to withdraw, however, and he returned to Saco and became a lumber merchant, his office being on Pepperell Square.

Children :

- i. CHARLES FREDERICK; drowned in the Saco River May 30, 1861, when 19 years of age.
- ii. JAMES MELVILLE (later Melville Coxe); m. May 6, 1873, Elizabeth von Kaas who was b. Sept. 26, 1846, in Bueckeburg, Schaumburg-Lippe, Germany, and d. in 1924; d. Jan. 23, 1923. Mr. Patten conducted the Sheboygan Business College in Sheboygan, Wisconsin.

Children :

1. *Charles Frederick* (later *Frederick Charles*), b. in Chicago April 10, 1874.
2. *Robert*; d. in childhood.
- iii. MARY FLORENCE (later Florence Mary); m. Nov. 24, 1869, Maj. Paul Chadbourne who had a distinguished record in the Civil War, being wounded three times, and who was mayor of Saco in 1876; d. Aug., 1932, survived by one son, Herbert Chadbourne of Boston.
- iv. ELLA A. (later Nelle A.); m. John Chadwick; d. March 19, 1938, at Southern Pines, North Carolina, survived by one son, John Patten Chadwick of Santiago, Chile.
- v. FRANCES WARE; d. unmarried in Saco Jan. 26, 1889, aged 30.

* York Probate, No. 14624.

† York Probate, No. 14613.

18. ROBERT⁴ PATTEN (*Johnson,³ James,² Robert¹*) was born in Kennebunkport February 13, 1823. He left home when he was only seventeen or eighteen years old and journeyed to Louisiana, where he worked at his trade of carpenter. The gold rush of 1849 drew him to California, but in a few years he was back in Louisiana, in Washington Parish, where he became active in lumbering and milling operations. Soon he turned to farming as well, and after the Civil War had a large plantation, raising cattle and hogs, rice and sugar-cane. Transportation facilities were bad, however, and as his children grew up and left the homestead, he began selling off his land, reducing his holdings to two thousand acres (worth only 75¢ an acre in 1879!). After the death of his third wife, he disposed of everything but his home, which passed by his will to his son George. He died in February, 1892.

Robert Patten was married three times. His first wife was Ann Elizabeth Ford, married May 10, 1851. She died shortly after the birth of her child in 1852. He next married on January 19, 1854, Sarah J. Ball who bore him ten children. His third wife, married October 30, 1879, was Adaline (Rankin) Denison.

Child by first wife:

- i. ANN ELIZABETH, b. March 21, 1852; m. John Rawls; d. March, 1911.

By second wife:

- ii. JULIET, b. March 9, 1855; m. Dec. 13, 1876, James Magee.
 iii. CHARLES, b. July 16, 1857; m. Feb. 24, 1876, Sarah Ophelia Pigott.
 iv. LAURA, b. July 15, 1859; m. Dec. 18, 1879, Walter W. Conley; d. Nov. 6, 1914.
 v. ROBERT, b. Aug. 11, 1861; d. young.
 vi. ALBERT, b. Oct. 25, 1863; m. Geneva Ball.
 vii. WILLIAM, b. Oct. 25, 1865; m. Dec. 22, 1887, Esther (Barnes) Lamp-ton.
 viii. EMILY, b. Sept. 19, 1868; m. Jan., 1885, Frank L. Ford.
 ix. WALTER, b. April 11, 1871; m. (1) Sept. 18, 1897, Mary Magee who d. Aug. 1922; m. (2) in 1924 Mesa Pittman.
 x. EDGAR, b. Sept. 12, 1873; d. young.
 xi. GEORGE, b. May 17, 1877; m. (1) Aug. 18, 1895, Lillie A. Magee; m. (2) April 21, 1935, Rosa (Hill) Dillon; living (1936) in Angie, La.*

By third wife:

- xii. ELIZA, b. June 9, 1881; m. Dr. James Hill of Trinity, Texas.

19. CHARLES EDWARD⁴ PATTEN (*Johnson,³ James,² Robert¹*) was born in Kennebunkport October 11, 1828. He married in Utica, New York, Rebecca Ann Edwards, who died in Chicago January 28, 1908, aged eighty. He died in Chicago April 14, 1900.

* George Patten has given me this information regarding his father and his family.

When very young men he and his brother Albert left Kennebunkport and settled in Utica, where they established a carriage factory. By 1870 he had left Utica and had gone to Chicago as a building contractor, remaining there about ten years. In 1880 he and his wife and daughter were living in Minneapolis, but by 1893 they returned to Chicago where he built a house which was their home for the remainder of their lives.

Children :

- i. **PERCIVAL (PERCY)**, b. in Utica, N. Y., in 1855; m. June 6, 1878, Margaret Reedy who was born in Washington, D. C.; he d. March 29, 1894, in Chicago, of small-pox; she d. March 17, 1907, in Chicago. He was a tin-smith and a dealer in stoves. Of their nine children, *Albert M., Charles, Mary* and *Katy* died in infancy, *Edward* died in 1896 aged 5 years, and the following four daughters survived to maturity.

Children :

1. *Elizabeth Rebecca*, b. Aug. 11, 1881, in Chicago; m. May 1, 1901, Max Robert Struwe, who was b. in Berlin, Germany, Aug. 8, 1876, and d. in Chicago July 8, 1927; three sons.
 2. *Mabel*, b. 1886; d., unmarried, in 1917, in Chicago.
 3. *Olive*, b. Jan. 1, 1889, in Chicago; m. Roscoe Graham, who was b. in Nashville, Tenn., Dec. 25, 1885; two children.
 4. *Hazel Edwards*, b. Nov. 9, 1893, in Chicago; m. July 6, 1915, Roy Sneath, who was b. Oct. 24, 1893, in Chicago, a carpenter and builder; four children.
- ii. **ELIZABETH EDWARDS**, b. in Boston Feb. 25, 1859; m. Albert Kirk Ordway in Minneapolis, Minn.; d. April 7, 1932, at Oak Park, Ill. He was a tailor, was born March 30, 1854, at West Edmeston, N. Y., and d. before 1900 in Baltimore.

Children, born in Chicago :

1. *Allie May Ordway*; d. in infancy.
 2. *Elizabeth Ordway*, b. Oct. 18, 1881; m. Joseph William Schertz, a civil engineer, who was b. July 17, 1881, at Tiskilwa, Ill.; she d. Sept. 24, 1934, at Oak Park, Ill.; two children.
- iii. **EDWARD**, b. in Boston about 1861; a sailor, who made his home with his brother Percy in Chicago; disappeared before the death of his father in 1900 and has not been heard from since by his family; unmarried in 1900; he is doubtless dead, *s.p.*

20. **ALBERT GALLATIN NASON¹ PATTEN** (*Johnson,³ James,² Robert¹*) was born in Kennebunkport January 6, 1831. He was married in Minneapolis, Minnesota, by Rev. William Eggleston, March 16, 1868, to Martha Elizabeth Hunt, who was born February 14, 1846, at Greensborough, Indiana, and died March 16, 1922, in Minneapolis. He died at Princeton, Minnesota, February 3, 1893.

In his youth Albert Patten went to Utica with his brother Charles and owned a share in the carriage factory, but after his brother's marriage he sold his interest to his sister-in-law and went to sea with his uncle Robert Patten, being made second mate within a few months. When his uncle retired, Albert returned to the United States from Australia and joined the regular army, enlisting July 15, 1854, and described as twenty-three years old, five feet five inches tall, blue eyes, brown hair, fair complexion and a carriage-maker by trade. He was assigned to the Second Regiment of U. S. Infantry which was stationed on the Minnesota frontier to protect settlers from the Indians. He was discharged as a sergeant in 1859, and again went to sea, visiting his uncle in Australia where he was when the Civil War broke out. Starting home to enlist, he was shipwrecked (for the third time in his career) and finally enlisted in the Union army in New Jersey April 4, 1865, being assigned to Co. C., First Battalion of New Jersey Infantry, and being discharged on June 29 of that year.

The war being over, Patten went to Minnesota and took up a tract of one hundred and sixty acres in Wright County and lived there for about a year when he went to Minneapolis and secured work in the Milwaukee Railroad shops. While there he married and with his wife went back to his Wright County land. This was later sold and other land bought, an acre of which he deeded to the community for a church site and for the cemetery where he is buried.

Children:

- i. PERCIBOE FRANCIS, b. Nov. 11, 1869; d. Dec. 1882.
- ii. WILLIAM ALLEN, b. Sept. 2, 1871; living, unmarried, with his sister Mrs. Rose (1937).
- iii. SUSAN ANNA, b. Oct. 8, 1876; d. March, 1877.
- iv. MAUDE GERTRUDE, b. Nov. 22, 1878; m. Sept. 10, 1904, Alexander Fraser Rose of Crieff, Scotland, a consulting engineer practicing in New York and living at Great Neck, Long Island (1937).

Children:

1. *Mary Florence Rose*, b. Aug. 28, 1905.
2. *William Allen Rose*, b. July 14, 1907; m. July 3, 1937, Josephine Anna Grohe.
3. *Alexenia Fraser Rose*, b. Feb. 19, 1909; m. Oct. 7, 1934, Thomas Alexander Elder.

WILLIAM PATTEN OF WELLS

1. WILLIAM PATTEN, blacksmith, an Ulster Scot, his wife Jane and probably at least one small daughter, emigrated from Ireland and came to Wells, Maine, by 1725. Another Patten, Matthew, was already in Wells, as were several other Protestant Irish families who had arrived from 1719 to 1722, the Boothbys and Jepsens from Mog-Water, the Wiers from Derg, the Kilpatrick and Pages from Donathkedy,* the Symingtons from Strabane, co. Tyrone, Bryce McLellan and his wife Jane from Ballymoney, co. Antrim, and the Rosses from Sligo.†

William Patten

Patten's first appearance in the records is as a witness to a Wells deed, Thomas Perkins to Forrest Delzell, in 1725.‡ In 1728 he was contemplating settlement in Falmouth and the town meeting of that community voted that he and others be admitted inhabitants provided that they pay £10 and arrive within twelve months.§ Apparently Patten did not fulfill this obligation but he continued to be interested in Falmouth and bought from Capt. Benjamin Larrabee a house and three acres there, between Back or Queen Street and Back Cove in 1730/1, and from David Franklin an acre of land and a log house in April, 1731.||

Patten continued to live in Wells, and in 1735 he was in serious trouble there. With several others he was accused and tried for taking part in forging and uttering public bills of credit. If found guilty, which is probable, his punishment did not involve long imprisonment, and the Wells church voted that, if he make public confession, which he did, "protesting sincere repentance," he be readmitted to fellowship.

From this episode we learn that William Patten had a brother in Wells. Samuel Patton had witnessed a Wells deed, Daniel Bayley to Ebenezer Simpson, in 1734,¶ and in 1735 he testified that he had recently left Wells with intent to go to Newcastle in

* See *New England Historical and Genealogical Register*, 75: 42 et seq.

† Neither Mog-Water nor Derg appear in the *Topographical Dictionary of Ireland* as towns or villages, but Derg is a river in co. Donegal. Donathkedy is possibly Donaghadee, co. Down, or Donaghadee, co. Donegal. There is also Donaghavey, co. Tyrone.

‡ York Deeds, 17: 337.

§ York Deeds, 18: 184.

|| York Deeds, 14: 73.

¶ York Deeds, 17: 185.

Pennsylvania because the people would not let him live in Wells now that his brother William had been arrested for passing counterfeit money.* There was also a Michael Patten who appears in Wells but once, as witness to a deed, Samuel Clark to Eleazer Clark in 1734/5,† and a Mary Paten who married Joshua Eaton in Wells September 22, 1738, and died after the birth of her daughter Sarah in 1739. Both were doubtless related to William Patten in some degree.

In 1739, for parental love and affection William Patten deeded to his four sons Thomas, William, Hans and John, minors, all his lands in Falmouth or elsewhere, each to get his share when he came of age. Hugh McLellan of Gorham witnessed the deed.‡ Having given up any prospect of moving from Wells, he bought from Enoch Davis, in three lots, seventy-six acres in Wells, which presumably became his homestead, in 1741 and 1742.§

In spite of his deed to his sons, not then recorded and possibly not delivered, he sold the acre lot and log house bought from Franklin to Jedediah Preble in 1748/9 for £300, and, to clear his title, had to get a conveyance from Robert Patterson, trader, of Biddeford, not only of the Franklin acre but of the Larrabee three acres. From this instrument it appears that Patten had verbally sold both properties to James McLellan, who, in 1735, had sold them to Patterson.||

Shortly before his death William Patten signed a document dated January 17, 1752, and recorded as a deed, by which his gift of land to his four sons in 1739 was confirmed but also arranging for payments of £13:6:8 to his three married daughters Susannah Simonton, Agnes Gillison and Mary Baston and £40 to his unmarried daughters Elizabeth and Sarah Patten when they became eighteen years of age.¶ His widow, Jane Patten, was appointed administratrix of his estate April 6, 1752, and presented inventories on July 1 and July 8, 1754, the latter including one-eighth of a sloop.** The sons, Thomas Patten, blacksmith, William Patten, mariner, Hans Patten, laborer, and John Patten, laborer, all of Wells, sold their father's acre lot (possibly a town grant) on Falmouth Neck to John Miller, tailor, January 9, 1759.††

* Supreme Judicial Court of Mass., No. 41875.

† York Deeds, 17: 171.

‡ York Deeds, 29: 173.

§ York Deeds, 22: 247; 23: 65, 160.

|| York Deeds, 27: 243; 29: 96.

¶ York Deeds, 29: 174.

** York Probate, No. 14632.

†† York Deeds, 36: 38.

Widow Jane Patten bought five acres in Wells from John McDaniel of Narrangansett No. 7 on February 10, 1755.* There is no record of her death.

Children, recorded in Wells:

- i. SUSANNA; m. Walter Symington of Wells and Cape Elizabeth (Simonton's Cove).
- ii. AGNES; m., int. July 8, 1749, Benjamin Jellison.
- iii. MARY, bapt. April 10, 1728; m. March 23, 1748/9, Shebuel Baston.
- iv. THOMAS, bapt. Nov. 23, 1729; blacksmith; d. in 1760, *s.p.*; administration on his estate granted to his brother William Patten Oct. 10, 1760.†
2. v. WILLIAM, bapt. Nov. 28, 1731.
- vi. JAMES, bapt. April 15, 1733; d. before 1739.
3. vii. HANS, bapt. June 18, 1735.
- viii. MARTHA, bapt. June 26, 1737; d. before 1752.
- ix. JOHN, bapt. May 28, 1738; mariner in Wells in 1759; no further record.
- x. ELIZABETH, bapt. May 4, 1739; m. May 3, 1763, Amos Hatch.
- xi. SARAH, bapt. July 11, 1742; m. July 21, 1765, Samuel Gooch.

2. WILLIAM² PATTEN (*William*¹) was baptized in Wells November 28, 1731. He married Priscilla Harmon, daughter of Johnson and Deborah (Harmon) Harmon of York, Oct. 1753 (int. in Wells September 2, 1753). Both owned the covenant of Wells Church in 1756 when their first child was baptized. He died before November 13, 1796, when she married Jeremiah Stevens of Wells.

Patten was a mariner. He joined his wife in a series of deeds from 1754 to 1756 by which she disposed of her inheritance in Harmon and Moulton lands in York.‡

He served as sergeant in Capt. Joshua Bragdon's company of "minute men" who enlisted on April 21, 1775, when the news of Lexington arrived, and marched to Cambridge. There is also record of his service under Capt. Bragdon, in Col. Scammon's regiment, from May 3 to October, 1775.

Children, recorded in Wells:

- i. SUSANNA, bapt. Feb. 8, 1756; m. Feb. 2, 1775, Isaac Bourne.
- ii. WILLIAM, bapt. June 5, 1757; no further record.
- iii. JOHNSON HARMON, bapt. July 12, 1761; no further record.
- iv. CAPT. JOHN; m. in Gloucester Nov. 16, 1794, Lydia Robinson, who d. in Gloucester Jan. 19, 1821, aged 51.

* York Deeds, 30: 341.

† York Probate, 10: 207.

‡ York Deeds, 30: 319, 341; 31: 198, 199; 34: 139.

Children, recorded in Gloucester :

1. *Samuel Robinson*, b. June 17, 1797. He may be the Samuel Patten, aged 63 and born in Maine, who was a miller in Sheboygan Falls, Wisconsin, in 1860.
2. *Priscilla Harmon*, b. July 13, 1800.

3. CAPT. HANS² PATTEN (*William*¹) was baptized June 18, 1735, in Wells. His first wife, whom he married December 3, 1759, was Abigail Littlefield, daughter of Jeremiah and Abigail Littlefield of Wells. Upon her death (after 1776), he married Joanna (Bourne) Cousins, widow of William Cousins, on January 6, 1779. His third wife was Susanna Woodward of York, int. in Wells March 18, 1786. Capt. Hans Patten's death is recorded in Wells April 1, 1828, aged ninety-three. His widow died January 9, 1830, "of old age."

He owned the covenant of Wells Church in 1761 and was admitted to full communion in 1778. He was lieutenant of Capt. Joshua Bragdon's company of militia which marched to Cambridge in response to the alarm of April 19, 1775. He was also 1st lieutenant in Capt. Daniel Littlefield's company, Col. Ebenezer Sayer's (1st Yorkshire) regiment of Eastern Militia, the officers being commissioned by orders in council June 25, 1776. From May 19 to July 17, 1777, he served in Rhode Island as lieutenant of Capt. Abel Moulton's company, Col. Jonathan Titcomb's regiment, and on June 3, 1779, he was commissioned captain of the 2d company in Col. Edward Grow's regiment of Massachusetts militia.

In Wells, on April 27, 1780, he was one of the town's committee to consider "The Declaration and Frame of the Constitution formed and agreed upon by the Convention of this State" and that same year he was on the Wells committee to raise a bounty for Revolutionary soldiers. The next year, 1781, he was a member of the committee to provide for the families of non-commissioned officers and privates.

Children, by first wife, baptized in Wells :

- i. JANE, bapt. Feb. 8, 1761; m. Aug. 12, 1784, Joseph Hobbs, Jr.
- ii. JEREMIAH, bapt. July 17, 1763; no further record.
- iii. THOMAS, bapt. June 30, 1765; no further record.
- iv. ABIGAIL, bapt. Aug. 3, 1767; m. Nov. 15, 1787, Thomas Hobbs.
4. v. JOSEPH, bapt. Jan. 28, 1770.
- vi. ELIZABETH, bapt. March 22, 1772; no further record.
- vii. LYDIA, bapt. May 29, 1774; m. April 4, 1793, Joseph Littlefield, 3d.
- viii. JAMES LITTLEFIELD, bapt. Oct. 20, 1776; no further record.

By second wife :

5. ix. ROBERT, bapt. June 25, 1780.

4. JOSEPH³ PATTEN (*Hans*,² *William*¹) was baptized in Wells January 28, 1770. Soon after he came of age he moved to Columbia in Washington County and set up a blacksmith's forge. He married Phebe Wilson, daughter of Joseph Wilson, who was born in Columbia January 23, 1775.

Patten was a justice of the peace in Columbia and the town's first town clerk. Much interested in the Masonic order, he was a founder of the local Ionic Lodge. In addition to his principal trade, he built and had a large stake in ships. The situation at sea which led to the War of 1812 brought him heavy losses, and when war was declared he decided to move his family to the west.

The journey to Centerville, Pennsylvania, not far from Lake Erie, was made in the winter, his family and property travelling in heavy sleighs drawn by his own horses and oxen. Their new home was in an unbroken forest, but, having cleared a large farm, Patten regained some measure of prosperity in the raising of wheat which he marketed at Erie. He was the first justice of the peace in Rome township, in which Centerville lay, a commissioner of Crawford County in 1829, and held other local offices. He died March 26, 1843, aged seventy-three.

In Columbia tradition states that Joseph Patten had thirteen children when he left the town, probably an exaggeration. As town clerk he recorded only four, but there were undoubtedly others born in Columbia, and at least one is said to have been born in Centerville.

Children :*

- i. HANS, b. Oct. 26, 1794.
- ii. JANE, b. Sept. 13, 1796.
- iii. MELISSA, b. June 17, 1798.
- iv. PICKERING, b. Dec. 7, 1799. He was a farmer in Centerville, according to the 1850 census, with a wife Mary Ann and a son "J. W." (Joseph Wilson?), aged two. Also in his family was a boy named Alexander McCray, aged eight, which may indicate that Mary Ann Patten had been a widow McCray. From a record in Washington County, Maine, it is obvious that Pickering Patten had a previous wife, Susan, who had gone back to Columbia and had died before 1850. In 1860 he and his wife were living alone.

Child, by wife Susan :

1. *Louise M.* A minor over fourteen, child and heir of Susan Patten, deceased, late of Columbia, wife of Pickering Patten, she nominated a guardian Oct. 8, 1850.†

* Grace Patten, aged forty-one, born in Connecticut, was living in Centerville in 1850. She was possibly the widow of another son of Joseph Patten. No children were listed in the 1850 census and her name does not appear in that of 1860.

† Washington County Probate.

By wife Mary Ann :

2. *J. W.* (*Joseph Wilson?*) ; aged 2 in 1850 ; d. before 1860.

- v. THOMAS J. ; m. Lucinda Warner Phillips who was born in Northampton, Mass. He was a carpenter and farmer in Centerville until the California "gold-rush" of 1849, when he went west to construct quartz mills and remained there in various mining interests. His wife died in Centerville Sept. 27, 1887.

Children :

1. *J. W.* (*Joseph Wilson?*), aged 11 in 1850 ; killed in action at Atlanta in the Civil War.
2. *Melissa*, aged 9 in 1850.
3. *Abigail*, aged 7 in 1850.
4. *Winfield*, aged 2 in 1850.
5. *Thomas J.*, b. July 21, 1850 ; m. (1) April, 1872, Kate Gilborn who d. Oct. 1875 ; m. (2) Nov. 11, 1877, Ella M. Saunders ; four children by second wife.

5. ROBERT^s PATTEN (*Hans*,² *William*¹) was baptized in Wells June 25, 1780. He married, int. in Wells October 6, 1804, Elizabeth Wells. He was a ship carpenter. He died in Wells July 25, 1819, aged thirty-nine, of consumption, and his widow died of the same disease January 12, 1823, aged forty-seven. He made his will, calling himself yeoman, July 19 and it was proved October 4, 1819. He left to his wife one-half of his real estate in Wells (for her life only) and all of his household goods, and named her executrix. To his only son Hans went one-half of the real estate when he became of age and the other half upon the death of his mother. To each of his daughters Joanna and Jane he left \$40 and the use of a room in his house. Isaac Bourne, who had married his cousin, Susanna Patten, was named guardian of the children October 4, 1819.* Joanna Patten was appointed administratrix *cum testamento annexo* in 1825.

Children :

- i. JOANNA, b. Jan. 9, 1806 ; m. her cousin Patten Littlefield, int. Aug. 8, 1829.
- ii. HANS, b. April 29, 1808 ; bapt. in Wells, his father dead, Dec. 26, 1822 ; chose Joshua Hubbard of Wells his guardian April 19, 1823.† In 1829 he sold all his interest in his father's land and buildings.‡ He married Alice Kimball, int. Dec. 17, 1831. They were both living in 1839,§ but no later record is found. They were in all probability the parents of two young Pattens who were the only representatives of the name in Wells in 1850 when the census was taken but who do not appear in the 1860 census.

* York Probate, No. 14629.

† York Probate, No. 14616.

‡ York Deeds, 213 : 74.

§ York Deeds, 166 : 134.

The Ancestry of James Patten

1. *Theodosia*, b. in 1833; living in the family of Otis Winn in 1850.
 2. *William*, b. in 1835; living in the family of John Tibbets in 1850.
- iii. **SAMUEL**, b. Feb. 15, d. March, 1810.
- iv. **JANE**, b. June 5, 1811; chose Joshua Hubbard of Wells her guardian Oct. 16, 1826.

RICHARDSON

It is in the north of England that patronymics ending in *son*, such as Richardson, were most commonly used, while in the south one finds the simple possessive form, as Richards. There were doubtless exceptions to this general tendency, but in many cases sons of northern families must have come to the south attracted by the greater activity based on London and the channel ports. The Richardson family with which this article deals lived in Hertfordshire, not far from the great metropolis.*

1. THOMAS¹ RICHARDSON of Standon, co. Hertford, and Katherine Duxford of Westmill, also in Hertfordshire, were married in the latter parish on August 24, 1590. Unfortunately the earliest surviving parish register of Standon does not begin until 1671, so that source of information regarding Thomas Richardson's parentage is cut off. His will indicates that he was a farmer in moderate circumstances. The Puritan influence was very strong in several parishes not far from Westmill, where the Richardsons lived after their marriage, and this as well as the prevailing hard times may have motivated the emigration of three sons of the family to New England, for of the many American families of whom it is said that "three brothers came over from England" (in the great majority of cases said falsely) the Richardsons are an exception in that the statement is true.

Catherine, the wife of Thomas Richardson, was buried March 10, 1631(2), and Thomas Richardson on January 8, 1633(4), at Westmill.

The will of Thomas Richardson of Westmill in the County of Herts, husbandman, was made March 4, 1630(1), and proved July 31, 1634, at Hitchin. He left to his wife Katherine for her life, "my littell close of pasture called little hunnymede cont[aining] half an acre" and after her death to his son Samuel and his heirs. To his son John, 40s. to be paid within three years after his and his wife's deaths. To his son James, 12d. To his son Thomas, £3 to be paid within five years of his and his wife's deaths. To his wife Katherine, all his movable goods for her life and thereafter to his son Samuel who was named executor. Witnesses: Richard Baker, Philip Baker.†

* *New England Historical and Genealogical Register*, 57: 297-300.

† Archdeaconry of Hitchin.

Children:

- i. **ELIZABETH**, bapt. at Westmill (as were her younger brothers and sister), Jan. 13, 1593(4); m. May 1, 1617, Francis Wilmant. Not mentioned in her father's will, she had been buried in Westmill June 22, 1630. When her husband made his will in 1658 he had another wife, Jane.

Francis Wyman was a husbandman of Westmill. In his will, made Sept. 15, 1658, and proved Feb. 14, 1658(9), he mentions his wife Jane; his two sons Francis Wyman and John Wyman "which are beyond sea" to whom he bequeathed £10 apiece "if they be in want and come over to demand the same"; his sister Susan Huitt, widow; his son Thomas Wyman to whom he left all his buildings, lands and appurtenances. Executor and residuary legatee: his son Thomas.*

The two boys, Francis and John Wyman, were tanners in Charlestown and Woburn, Massachusetts.

- ii. **JOHN**, bapt. Nov. 7, 1596; living in 1630/1.
 iii. **JAMES**, bapt. April 6, 1600; living in 1630/1.
 iv. **SAMUEL**, bapt. Dec. 22, 1602; m. Joanna Thake at Much Horney, co. Hertford, in 1622. He and his brother Thomas followed their brother Ezekiel to Massachusetts Bay where they had arrived by 1635/6. Both were on a Charlestown committee July 1, 1636. Granted a house-plot in 1637, he was admitted to the church Feb. 18, 1637/8, and took the Freeman's oath May 2, 1638. In 1640 with his brothers and four others he was a member of a committee to lay out the town which became Woburn but which was then within the bounds of Charlestown. They were all original members of the new church "gathered" in 1642. A selectman of Woburn 1644-1646, 1649-1651, he paid the highest town tax in 1645. He died intestate March 23, 1657/8, and administration was granted to his widow Joanna and his eldest son John. His nephew, Lieut. John Wyman, was appointed guardian of his sons John and Joseph on June 25, 1658.

Joanna Richardson, who had joined the Charlestown church Sept. 9, 1639, made her will June 20, 1660. She left her real property to her eldest son John and her other sons Joseph, Samuel and Stephen, her clothing to her daughter Elizabeth, and also mentioned her daughter Mary Mousall.

Children:

1. *Samuel*, bapt. in Westmill July 3, 1633; d. young.
2. *Elizabeth*, bapt. in Westmill May 22, 1635; living (or a younger daughter of the same name) in 1666, possibly married although her mother used her first name only in her will.
3. *Mary*, bapt. in Charlestown Feb. 25, 1637/8; m. Thomas Mousall.
4. *John*, bapt. in Charlestown Nov. 12, 1639; m. (1) Oct. 22, 1658, Elizabeth Bacon; m. (2) at Cambridge Oct. 28, 1672, Mary Pierson (Woburn record); m. (3) June 25, 1689, Mary Willing. A soldier in King Philip's war, he d. Jan. 1, 1696/7.
5. *Hannah*, b. in Woburn March 8, 1641/2; d. April 8, 1642.
6. *Joseph*, b. in Woburn July 27, 1643; m. Nov. 5, 1666, Hannah Green. A soldier in the attack on the Narra-

* *New England Historical and Genealogical Register*, 43: 156.

- gansett fort in the Great Swamp fight in 1675, he d. March 5, 1717/8.
7. *Samuel*, b. in Woburn May 22, 1646; m. (1) Martha ———; m. (2) Sept. 20, 1674, Hannah Kingsley who with her baby was killed by Indians April 10, 1676; m. (3) Nov. 7, 1676, Phebe Baldwin, his cousin; m. (4) Sept. 8, 1680, Sarah Hayward; d. April 29, 1712.
 8. *Stephen*, b. in Woburn Aug. 15, 1649; m. in Billerica Jan. 2, 1674/5, Abigail Wyman daughter of his cousin Francis Wyman; he d. March 22, 1717/8, and she d. Sept. 17, 1720, aged 60.
 9. *Thomas*, b. in Woburn Dec. 31, 1651; d. Sept. 27, 1657.
2. v. **EZEKIEL**, b. probably c. 1604. There is no baptismal record of this son in the Westmill register and he may have been baptized in his father's parish of Standon. There is no doubt that Thomas Richardson was his father, however, in spite of the fact that he was not mentioned in Thomas's will. In Massachusetts Bay, first at Charlestown and later at Woburn, Ezekiel, Samuel and Thomas Richardson, and Francis and John Wyman, sons of the senior Thomas Richardson's daughter Elizabeth, were living as close neighbors in the 1630-1640 decade, and Ezekiel in his will specifically calls Samuel and Thomas his brothers. It is probable that Thomas, the father, gave Ezekiel his share of his estate to help pay for the passage to New England in 1630.
- vi. **MARGARET**, bapt. April 19, 1607; not in her father's will.
- vii. **THOMAS**, bapt. July 3, 1608; m. Mary ——— in England, her admission to the Charlestown church Feb. 21, 1635/6, being the earliest record of Thomas's family in Massachusetts Bay. He joined the church Feb. 18, 1637/8, and took the Freeman's oath May 2, 1638. Like his brothers he took part in the foundation of the town and church in Woburn, where he d. intestate Aug. 28, 1651, his personality valued at £133 and his real estate at £80. The widow Mary m. Michael Bacon, Sr., Oct. 26, 1655, and d. May 19, 1670.

Children:

1. *Mary*, bapt. in Charlestown Nov. 17, 1638; m. May 15, 1655, John Baldwin.
2. *Sarah*, bapt. in Charlestown Nov. 22, 1640; m. March 22, 1660, Michael Bacon, Jr.
3. *Isaac*, b. May 14, 1643, in Woburn (as were the younger children); m. June 19, 1667, Deborah Fuller; d. April 2, 1689; the widow m. ——— Shaw.
4. *Thomas*, b. Oct. 4, 1645; m. (1) in Cambridge Jan. 5, 1669/70, Mary Stimpson; m. (2) in Billerica Dec. 29, 1690, Sarah, widow of Thomas Patten; d. in Billerica Feb. 25, 1709/10.
5. *Ruth*, b. April 14, 1647; possibly m. Thomas Fuller.*
6. *Phebe*, b. Jan. 24, 1648/9.
7. *Nathaniel*, b. Jan. 2, 1650/1; m. Mary ——— who d. Dec. 22, 1719. He was wounded in the Great Swamp Fight in King Philip's war Dec. 19, 1675. He d. Dec. 4, 1714.

2. **EZEKIEL² RICHARDSON** (*Thomas¹*). As he had no children baptized in Westmill, his English home, and as all his known chil-

* *Ibid.*, 17: 351.

dren were born in New England from 1632 to 1643, it seems highly probable that he married just before leaving England or immediately upon his arrival in Massachusetts Bay in 1630. If he were the oldest child of his parents we should have to place his birth in 1591, making him thirty-nine when he emigrated, but between his brother Samuel and his sister Margaret, baptized in 1602 and 1607 respectively, there is an adequate space for another child and it is probable that that is where Ezekiel belongs. If born in 1604 he would have been twenty-six when he arrived in New England—a more usual age.

Richardson was undoubtedly a passenger on one of the ships in the Winthrop fleet which left England in the spring of 1630. Eleven of the vessels had arrived by July 6 of that year, and most of the voyagers settled with their governor at Charlestown at the head of Boston harbor, where Ezekiel Richardson and Susanna his wife became members of the First Church on August 27, 1630. It was not long before Winthrop, and the church with him, moved to the neighboring peninsula which became Boston. The Richardsons remained in Charlestown, however, and were dismissed with others to form a new Charlestown church on October 14, 1632.

On April 1, 1633, Ezekiel was appointed constable of "Charlton" by the General Court "for the year next ensuing & till a new be chosen," and in 1635 he was himself a deputy from Charlestown to the Court, which met in New Town [Cambridge]. He was elected a member of the town's first board of selectmen on February 10, 1634/5, and served also in 1637, 1638 and 1639. On September 19, 1637, he was on a "Jury of Life and Death" when three persons were found guilty of adultery, one of murder, and one acquitted on the charge of murder.*

When the controversy between the governmental and religious powers and Mrs. Hutchinson and Mr. John Wheelwright was at its height, Richardson was one of eighty who signed a remonstrance in Wheelwright's favor which was presented to the General Court on March 9, 1636/7. The signers were hotly accused of sedition, but the great majority maintained their position and were ordered disarmed. Richardson was one of eight men, however, his name leading the list, who on November 15, 1637, acknowledged their sin in signing the remonstrance and the General Court "yelded them that their hands should be crossed out." They were not disarmed. Whether their action was one of

* *Records of the Governor and Council of Massachusetts Bay*, Boston, 1853, 1: 104, 156, 203.

courage in admitting error or of cowardice in failing to maintain conviction is an unanswerable question.*

Richardson's brothers Samuel and Thomas joined him in Charlestown by 1635/6, and in 1637 all three had grants of land on "Misticke side" [Malden]. Ezekiel was on a committee to value the town for tax purposes in 1640.

In May, 1640, Charlestown petitioned the General Court for an enlargement of its territory and in reply the Court granted four square miles. On May 15 Ezekiel Richardson was one of those sent by the town to explore the grant and determine its boundaries, and, this having been done, the church of Charlestown chose, on November 5, seven men, including the three Richardson brothers, to act as a commission for the erection of a church and the organization of a new town upon this land. Building began in 1641 and the territory was incorporated as Woburn in September, 1642. The three brothers settled there on adjoining farms, known as Richardson Row, now in the later town of Winchester.

Ezekiel sat on the original board of selectmen of Woburn in 1644 and continued in that office in 1645, 1646 and 1647. He was a deacon of the church until his death. On May 10, 1643, he was named Commissioner to End Small Causes, or local justice, by the General Court and also was appointed to a joint committee of Cambridge and Woburn men to lay out a road between the two communities. He died in Woburn October 21, 1647.

The will of Ezekiel Richardson of Woebourne was made July 20, 1647, and proved June 1, 1648. He appointed his wife Susanna and his son Theophilus joint executors. To his son Josias, £30 to be paid in money, cattle or corn when he shall accomplish one and twenty years of age. To his son James, a legacy identical with that of Josias. To his daughter Phebe, an identical legacy except that payment may be made "within six months after the day of her marriage" if that should occur before her majority. In case any of these three children should die before the legacies were payable, his or her legacy was to go to the survivors. If Theophilus should die before coming of age, his portion was to be equally divided among the other children. "I doe frelie fforgive and discharge whatsoever accounts and demands have been between my brother Samuel Richardson and myself." To his brother Thomas Richardson his son Thomas, 10s. to be paid one year after his [the testator's] decease. Overseers: Edward

* *Ibid.*, I: 209.

Converse, John Mousall of Wocbourne, and, in case either shall die before the accomplishment of the will, the survivor, with the consent of Thomas Carter, Pastor of the church of Wocbourne, shall have power to choose another overseer. Debts and funeral expenses having been paid, the residue was given and bequeathed to the executors "provided that my wife may peceably injoy her habitation in the house soe long as she shall live." Witnesses: Thomas Carter scribe, Edward Convars, John Mousall. The inventory, taken November 18, 1647, was in a total of £190.

The widow Susanna Richardson married Henry Brooks of Woburn. On March 23, 1655, she "Susanna Richardson (now Brooks) widow of Ezekiel Richardson" quitclaimed 35 acres in Charlestown to Thomas Moulton and John Greenland. On March 27, 1657, Samuel Richardson, brother of Ezekiel Richardson, deceased, quitclaimed 40 acres in Woburn to his sister Susanna Richardson, now Brooks, for her life with a remainder to his cousin Theophilus Richardson. Henry and Susanna Brooks resigned half of Ezekiel Richardson's house and lands to Theophilus on December 13, 1659.* Susanna Brooks died on September 15, 1681, and Henry Brooks on April 12, 1683.

Children:

- i. **PHEBE**, bapt. in Boston June 3, 1632; m. in Woburn Nov. 1, 1649, Henry Baldwin who d. Feb. 14, 1697/8; she d. Sept. 18, 1716.
- ii. **THEOPHILUS**, bapt. in Charlestown Dec. 22, 1633; m. May 2, 1654, Mary Champney, who m. secondly Feb. 25, 1683/4, John Brooks; d. Dec. 28, 1674; she d. Aug. 28, 1704. He lived in Woburn where his estate was valued on April 3, 1675, at £559.

Children, born in Woburn:

1. *Ezekiel*, b. Oct. 28, 1655; m. in Cambridge July 27, 1687, Elizabeth Swan; d. March 13, 1733/4.
 2. *Mary*, b. Jan. 15, 1657/8; m. (1) June 24, 1681, Joseph Peirce; m. (2) Daniel Hudson.
 3. *Sarah*, b. April 23, 1660.
 4. *Abigail*, b. Oct. 21, 1662; m. June 30, 1681, John Bateman.
 5. *Hannah*, b. April 6, 1665; m. March 28, 1706, Thomas Frost of Billerica, who was born in 1667, as his second wife; d. May 19, 1708, one month after the birth of a son.
 6. *John*, b. Jan. 16, 1667/8; m. (1) by 1690 Deborah Brooks; m. (2) at Cambridge Feb. 22, 1704/5, Lydia Pratt; d. Oct. 29, 1749.
 7. *Hester*, b. June 25, 1670.
 8. *Ruth*, b. Aug. 31, 1673; m. Jan. 20, 1703/4, William Russell of Salem Village.
3. iii. **JOSIAH**, bapt. at Charlestown Nov. 7, 1685.
 - iv. **JOHN**, bapt. at Charlestown July 21, 1638; d. Jan. 7, 1642/3.

* Middlesex Deeds, II: 36, 72, 154.

- v. JONATHAN, bapt. at Charlestown Feb. 15, 1639/40; d. young.
 vi. JAMES, bapt. at Charlestown July 11, 1641; m. in Chelmsford Nov. 28, 1660, Bridget Henchman.* He was in charge of the Christian Indians of the Wamesit tribe at Chelmsford. A lieutenant in the local train-band, he saw service from the beginning of King Philip's war and was killed June 29, 1677, in battle at Scarborough, Maine. His widow, Bridget, m. Oct. 8, 1679, William Chandler of Andover.

Children, born in Charlestown:

1. *Thomas*, b. Oct. 26, 1661; m. Sept. 28, 1682, Hannah Colburn; d. in Dracut Feb. 10, 1700.
 2. *James*, b. Nov. 24, 1663.
 3. *Elizabeth*, b. Sept. 27, 1665; m. Jan. 1, 1681/2, Andrew Allen of Andover.
 4. *Ezekiel*, b. Sept. 3, 1667; m. Mary Bunker; d. Nov. 27, 1696, at Chelmsford from the effects of a blow struck two days before by Edward Spalding; his widow, Mary, m. Feb. 2, 1697/8, Moses Barron.
 5. *Phebe*, b. Jan. 10, 1669/70; d. Oct. 8, 1677.
 6. *Ruth*, b. Feb. 16, 1671/2; d. Dec. 6, 1674.
 7. *Bridget*, b. March 17, 1674(5).
 8. *John*; living June 21, 1697, according to a letter from Major James Convers of Woburn to Hon. James Russell, Judge of Probate, Middlesex County, regarding his father's estate.
- vii. RUTH, b. in Woburn Aug. 23, d. Sept. 7, 1643.

3. CAPT. JOSIAH³ RICHARDSON (*Ezekiel*², *Thomas*¹) was baptized in Charlestown on November 7, 1635. He was married by Capt. Simon Willard in Concord on June 6, 1659, to Remembrance Underwood. His gravestone in Chelmsford is inscribed "Here Lyes ye Body of Capt Josias Richardson Aged 61 Years Died the 22 of July 1695," but the inventory of his estate says June 22. Mrs. Remembrance Richardson, wife of Capt. Josiah Richardson, died February 20, 1718/9, aged 79 years.

Shortly before his marriage Richardson settled in Chelmsford where the Underwoods lived, and he was soon serving in the minor town offices. On May 17, 1658, he signed a petition to the General Court asking that the inhabitants of "this Remoat Corner of the wildenes" be allowed to trade with the Indians. He was named, in 1662/3, to represent Chelmsford on a joint committee of Groton and Chelmsford men to lay out a highway between the two towns.

Elected constable in 1667, he became a selectman in 1668 and was elected again in 1673, in 1677 and every year thereafter, except 1684, through 1689, and finally in 1693. In 1669, with Capt. Thomas Henchman and William Fletcher, Josiah erected

* It was probably his youth (19) at marriage that led Judge Savage to think that he was a brother of Ezekiel instead of a son.

a sawmill, the town granting them a tract of land and giving them liberty to cut suitable timber on the town commons.

John Fiske, the Chelmsford parson, certified on March 9, 1673/4, that Josiah Richardson had "approved himself unto our church" and desired to take the Freeman's Oath, which he did on March 11, 1673/4. He purchased gunpowder for 3s. from the town in the fall of 1674 before the outbreak of King Philip's war, but he does not seem to have taken an active part in the conflict although he was a sergeant in the local militia company. After hostilities ended he was one of the committee to seat the people of Chelmsford in their meetinghouse in 1678.

On February 24, 1679(80), the freemen of Chelmsford chose Richardson to attend the adjournment of the County Court at Cambridge on the last Wednesday of March and carry with him answers to questions propounded by "Honored Thomas Danforth" dated December 30, 1679:

1. The number of males and estates in Chelmsford are, as in the county rate given in the year 1679—12. 9. 7.*
2. That we pay to our minister, in money £20, and in corn and flesh £60, and 30 cords of wood, in all £86.
3. That we have no Grammar School but several schooldames for English and Mr. John Fiske for writing.
4. That we have chosen 6 Tythingmen.
5. Number of families, 59.

There had been a small tribe of Christian Indians, the Wamesits, living on the northern bounds of Chelmsford from early times, and at this period under the guardianship of Lieut. James Richardson, Josiah's brother. During King Philip's war many of them served under the lieutenant, but, when his barn was burned by some hostile Indians in his absence, the rougher element in the town turned upon the peaceful Wamesits and killed and wounded some women and children with the result that the tribe was dispersed and only a few ever returned. On February 2, 1685, Captain Hinchman, Mr. John Fiske and Sergt. Josiah Richardson were a committee to treat with the Indians and the General Court "about Wamasecke Neck of land in way of purchasing the same." They were successful and Josiah Richardson and his son Josiah were among the grantees. On January 19, 1688/9, some of the remaining Indians, "for the love they bore to" the sergeant, conveyed to him a parcel of land where the

* This answer does not seem responsive to Danforth's question. The figures (£) 12: 9: 7 probably represent the rate or tax.

Concord river flows into the Merrimac, where now stands the city of Lowell.*

Richardson represented Chelmsford in the General Court in 1688 and 1689. On June 20, 1689, was recorded "Thees to serti-fi: the Honored Council in Boston that Sergent Josiah Richardson was Legalli chosen Captaine . . . by ye Towne of Chelmsford." He was elected town clerk in 1691, 1692, 1693 and 1694, for which he was paid £1 a year. He also received £10 "for his service done" between 1689 and 1692, which possibly included attendance at the Court.

When Indian war again broke out Chelmsford made "a last division" of powder, shot and flints, and on November 30, 1691, Captain Richardson received two pounds of powder and three pounds of shot. At his garrison in Chelmsford on March 16, 1691/2, the captain had with him John Spauldin, Josiah Richardson, his son, and Thomas Scotborn and their families, the men numbering eleven.

Captain Richardson died intestate and his widow, Remembrance, was appointed to administer his estate on March 12, 1695/6, her sureties being the eldest son Josiah Richardson, William Fletcher and Jonathan Richardson, all of Chelmsford. The inventory, made by John Spaulding, senior, Nathaniel Butcrfield, senior, and Eliazer Brown, senior, was presented on September 4, 1695, in the amount of £697: 05: 6. The "homstall," consisting of forty-five acres of land, buildings, orchard and fences, was valued at £100, and there were other parcels of land at "newfeeld," Stony brook, Flagy meadow, Tadnek, at the mouth of the Concord river and at the sawmill. Sixty-nine acres of land and three houses, their location not given, but probably built by the captain for his sons, were worth £80. "Severall persuns owed him £99: 15: 0." Except for a bed and a cupboard, no furniture is listed but chairs, stools and tables may have been included in "several other things" and "sum other things." He had "yarn Redy for weaving" worth £11: 3: 0, and "New Cloth Redy fuld" worth £8: 10: 0. Cattle, sheep and swine came to £80 and there was a good supply of hops, wheat, rye and Indian corn.

On March 12, 1696, the widow and children entered an agreement for the division of the estate. She was to have the liberty of dwelling in the west end of the house and the improvement of the orchard and arable land that was enclosed on the north side of the house, also one-third of the hops on "that parcell of land now Improved for said fruite" and pasturage for a horse and a

* Middlesex Deeds, XII: 204.

calf. Also her four sons bound themselves to till for her four acres of good land and to sow for her a peck of wheat and a peck of flax, to bring to her eight loads of good hay "and the several fruites produced on land aforesaid." She was to have one-third of the movables except certain stock and tools which were assigned to Samuel Richardson, the youngest son. "The four sons of said Captain Richardson, namely Josiah, Jonathan, John and Samuel," then divided the upland and meadows, while Sergt. William Fletcher, Thomas Colburne and Hennerly Farwell, the husbands of the three daughters (Sara, Mary and Susanna) shared two-thirds of the movable estate.*

Children, born in Chelmsford:

- i. SARAH, b. March 25, 1659/60; m. Sept. 19, 1677, Lieut. William Fletcher; d. at Tyngsborough Jan. 30, 1748.
- ii. MARY, b. April 14, 1662; m. Sept. 17, 1681, Thomas Colburn.
4. iii. JOSIAH, b. May 18, 1665.
- iv. JONATHAN, b. Oct. 8, 1667; m. (1) Nov. 8, 1692, Elizabeth Bates; m. (2) May 18, 1724, widow Elizabeth Howard of Newton; d. Feb. 21, 1758. Will, Sept. 12, 1750-April 9, 1758. Inventory £744: 17: 0 in "lawful money."

Children, born in Chelmsford:

1. *Jonathan*, b. Dec. 28, 1693.
2. *Elizabeth*, b. Oct. 19, 1696; m. Edward Colburn of Dracut.
3. *Mary*, b. June 26, 1699; m., int. June 30, 1716, Samuel Colburn of Dracut.
4. *Lydia*, b. July 14, 1702; m., int. Jan. 1, 1720/1, Rev. Thomas Parker, Harvard 1718, the first minister of Dracut, who was executor of her father's will.
5. *Olive*, b. June 29, 1706; m. John Colburn.
6. *Thankful*, b. Aug. 16, 1709; m., int. Feb. 28, 1732/3, Ezra Colburn of Dracut.
7. *Lucy*, b. April 6, 1712; m. John Sprague of Charlestown.
8. *Sarah*, b. 171-; m., int. Oct. 7, 1739, William Peirce of Groton.
- v. JOHN, b. Feb. 14, 1669/70; m. Jan. 31, 1693/4, Elizabeth Farwell who d. May 9, 1722; d. Sept. 13, 1746, aged 76.

Children, born in Chelmsford:

1. *Elizabeth*, b. March 12, 1694/5.
2. *Sarah*, b. Aug. 5, 1696.
3. *Phoebe*, b. March 9, 1700.
4. *Hannah*, b. March 18, 1702/3.
5. *Mary*, b. July 11, 1705.
6. *John*, b. Nov. 16, 1711; m., int. Dec. 16, 1733, Esther Pearce; d. Aug. 28, 1764, in Chelmsford.
7. *Henry*, b. Sept. 19, 1714.
- vi. SAMUEL, b. Feb. 21, 1672/3; m. Jan. 27, 1702/3, Rachel Howard who d. Feb. 26, 1727; d. April 23, 1754, aged 81.

* Middlesex Probate, No. 19014.

Children, born in Chelmsford:

1. *Rachel*, b. April 14, 1704.
 2. *Sarah*, b. June 16, 1706.
 3. *Samuel*, b. April 17, 1709; d. Feb. 18, 1727.
 4. *Susanna*, b. Dec. 15, 1712.
 5. *Eleazer*, b. Oct. 9, 1718; m. Lydia Perham, March 30, 1748.
- vii. SUSANNA, b. about 1676; m. Jan. 29, 1695/6, Henry Farwell.
- viii. REMEMBRANCE, b. April 29, 1684; d. before 1696.

4. LIEUT. JOSIAH⁴ RICHARDSON (*Josiah², Ezekiel², Thomas¹*) was born in Chelmsford on May 18, 1665. He married on December 14, 1687, Mercy Parris of Dunstable. He died September 17, 1711, aged 47. His widow, Mercy, died April 25, 1748.

He was a lieutenant in the county militia and this title was given him when he was elected selectman of Chelmsford in 1692, differentiating him from his father who was still active in town affairs. He was elected again in 1695. He saw military action in Queen Anne's war in 1702 and was for this service one of the grantees from the General Court of lands in Tyngstown, then in Massachusetts. When this territory was, in a boundary decision, made a part of New Hampshire (it is now the site of the city of Manchester), the General Court substituted for it the township of Wilton, now in Maine.

Mercy Richardson, widow of the late Josiah Richardson of Chelmsford, was appointed to administer his estate on November 21, 1711, her bondsmen being Jonathan Richardson and John Wright. An inventory stating that Lieutenant Richardson had died on September 17, had been taken three days afterward by Moses Barron, Jonathan Richardson and John Richardson. The homestead was valued at £150: 10: 6, and there were several other parcels of land and meadow, at Stoney Brook (£50: 10: 0), at Wamesit Neck (£30), etc. His share in the sawmill and the land there was worth £26: 11: 0. The contents of his house were simple and the barns had a good stock of animals, horses, cattle and swine. The family orchard had been productive as "ten Barills of Cyder" testify. On November 14, 1712, Mercy Richardson presented her account, showing the value of the estate to have been £514: 4: 0, and payments of £78: 2: 7 which she had made were allowed. The bill of Dr. Roger Toothaker was £2 and that of Dr. Jonathan Prescott £5: 5: 0. Benjamin Fitch had supplied gloves for the funeral worth £2. Francis Foxcroft, the Judge of Probate, made a note on a separate sheet that "Mr Hildreth the Husb^d of Mercy p ab^t 20th before the father dyed for wh he has released his right in behalfe of his

wife Mercy in the fathers estate both in lands & moveables & must be taken off this acco^t & must be left out upon the dividend of this estate, but the release must be lodged in this office first." Judge Foxcroft ordered the widow's dower of one-third of the estate set off on November 17, and directed that the other two-thirds be carefully valued as he had granted the request of the eldest son, Josiah Richardson, to which the widow and the guardians of the minor children had consented, that Josiah should buy the said two-thirds. Josiah entered a bond for £500, with his brother-in-law Ephraim Hildreth as his surety, on July 15, 1713, to pay "the several sums ordered" to his brothers Robert, Zachariah and William Richardson, and his sisters Mercy, the wife of Ephraim Hildreth, and Hannah Richardson.*

Children, born in Chelmsford:

- i. MERCY, b. Jan. 9, 1688/9 or 1689/90; m. c. 1707 Ephraim Hildreth of Dracut. (*See Hildreth.*)
- ii. CAPT. JOSIAH, b. May 5, 1691; m. (1) Lydia ----- who d. March 28, 1737; m. (2), int. April 1, 1738, Elizabeth French of Dunstable who d. Dec. 15, 1771; he d. between Aug. 17, 1773, and Dec. 31, 1776, the dates of the making and proving of his will. On Oct. 17, 1711, he was admitted as an inhabitant of Dracut, settling on a large tract on the Merrimac river. He was devoted to the public service of the town, serving as selectman, town clerk and treasurer, and in 1749 he paid the second highest tax. Calling himself gentleman in his will of 1773, he named two grandsons, Uriah Coburn and Obadiah Richardson executors.

Children, born in Dracut:

1. *Lydia*, b. and d. Nov. 4, 1713.
2. *Lydia*, b. Sept. 27, 1714; m., int. July 17, 1736, Thomas Cummings of Ipswich.
3. *Hannah*, b. April 20, 1717; † d. Feb. 26, 1717/8.
4. *Josiah*, b. Dec. 29, 1718; m., int. Aug. 11, 1753, Sarah Varnum.
5. *Jonathan*, b. Dec. 19, 1720; m. Dec. 4, 1746, Lucy Clark of Chelmsford.
6. *Ephraim*, b. Nov. 12, 1722; m., int. Feb. 23, 1744/5, Elizabeth Richardson.
7. *Moses*, b. May 14, 1724; d. March 21, 1726.
8. *Hannah*, b. Dec. 25, 1725; m. (1), int. Sept. 12, 1747, Joshua Colburn, her father's cousin; m. (2), int. June 1, 1765, Elijah Hildreth, her cousin.
9. *Moses*, b. June 12, 1728; m. (1), int. May 16, 1752, Elizabeth Colburn; m. (2) Jan. 5, 1770, Esther Carlen.
10. *Mercy*, b. Jan. 5, 1729/30; m., int. Oct. 20, 1753, Abraham Colburn, Jr.
11. *David*, b. June 1, 1731; m., int. Jan. 5, 1754, Elizabeth Colburn, his father's cousin.
12. *Samuel*, b. March 28, 1737; d. March 28, 1740.

* Middlesex Probate, No. 19015.

† Recorded again as Feb. 20, 1717/8.

- iii. **ROBERT**, b. Oct. 2, 1698; m. Deborah ———. He moved from Chelmsford about 1724 to Litchfield, N. H., where in 1725 he was captain of a company of snowshoe men.

Children, born in Chelmsford (probably others):

1. *Phoebe*, b. Feb. 2, 1719.
 2. *Parish* (his grandmother's family name), b. Dec. 18, 1724; a soldier in the expedition against Crown Point in 1758.
- iv. **ZACHARIAH**, b. Feb. 1695/6; m. Sarah Butterfield; d. March 22, 1776, aged 80; she d. Aug. 11, 1788, aged 88.

Children, born in Chelmsford:

1. *Sarah*, b. Oct. 13, 1719.
 2. *Zachariah*, b. Feb. 19, 1721/2; m. (1) Oct. 9, 1753, Hannah Blodget; m. (2) April 22, 1755, Sarah Warren.
 3. *Meroy*, b. July 15, 1724; d. young.
 4. *Bridget*, b. April 23, 1726; m., int. Feb. 15, 1745/6, Timothy Fletcher.
 5. *Deborah*, b. June 1, 1727; m., int. March 7, 1742/3, Joseph Farrar.
 6. *Lydia*, b. May 17, 1729; m. May 21, 1761, Jacob Chamberlain.
 7. *Mercy* (Mary), b. Feb. 20, 1730/1; d. Jan. 19, 1745/6.
 8. *Josiah*, b. May 8, 1734; m. Dec. 2, 1761, Lydia Warren. Their son Paul, b. June 14, 1762, was mentioned in the will of his grandfather Richardson.
 9. *Rebecca*, b. Feb. 16, 1735/6.
 10. *Hannah*, b. 173—.
 11. *Lucy*, b. Nov. 11, 1742; m. Feb. 24, 1763, Peter Spalding.
- v. **HANNAH**, b. Sept. 28, 1698; living in 1712.
- vi. **WILLIAM**, b. Sept. 19, 1701; m. c. 1722 Elizabeth Colburn. They lived in Pelham, N. H., where on April 1, 1776, he made his will, probated Nov. 7, 1776.

Children, born in Pelham, recorded in Dracut:

1. *Elizabeth*, b. July 27, 1724; m., int. Nov. 29, 1741, Capt. Joseph Butterfield, of Nottingham.
2. *Abner*; living in 1776.
3. *Mary*, b. April 18, 1728; m. Capt. Reuben Butterfield.
4. *William*, b. Jan. 1730/1.
5. *Mercy*, b. June 17, 1736; m. Jacob Fletcher.
6. *Asa*, b. Feb. 23, 1738; living in Pelham in 1794.
7. *Sarah*, b. Feb. 23, 1741/2; m. Benjamin Gage.
8. *Hannah*, b. March 8, 1746/7; m. (1) Aug. 4, 1763, Timothy Spalding; m. (2) Nov. 12, 1795, Joseph Jewett.
9. *Daniel*, b. March 1, 1749; m. Jan. 26, 1773, Sarah Merchant of Boston.

SHATSWELL

1. WILLIAM SHATSWELL was one of a family group which came to Ipswich with the earliest settlers, certainly by the year 1633. It included, in addition to William, two brothers John and Theophilus Shatswell, their sister Mary Webster, and probably two other sisters, the wives of William Sargent and Matthias Curwen. At present it is uncertain what relationship William Shatswell bore to the others. Possibly he was their father, but, if not, the probability is that he was an elder brother. In addition, there were other early emigrants who undoubtedly belonged to this group including Mr. John Dillingham of Ipswich, Mr. Edward Dillingham of Saugus and Plymouth and Edward Clark of Haverhill.

William Shatswell was living as late as 1645, but must have died soon thereafter if he did not return to England. The only record of his life in Ipswich is contained in the records of the estate of Sarah Dillingham, the widow of Mr. John Dillingham, who made her will July 14, 1636. John and Sarah Dillingham left large estates—his was valued at nearly £1000—and their only heir was a minor daughter Sarah whose "education and government" were entrusted to Mr. Samuel Appleton and Mr. Richard Saltonstall. Late in 1645 Mr. Saltonstall, about to sail for England, gave an accounting of his trust, and it is therein that William Shatswell is named. Saltonstall stated that he had paid Mr. Shatswell, for the board of young Sarah Dillingham for a period of eight years, £69: 18: 2 at the rate of 34d. a week, which sum had been arrived at by arbitration, and he adds "Wm. Satchwell hath recd 11s 6d more than his due for which he is accountable."* The account also shows that some payments to Shatswell had been made in beaver skins, a common currency of the period, and that "shifts and shewes" had been given him on Sarah's account. In a letter dated December 12, 1645, Mr. Saltonstall says that although he believed that Goodman Shatswell should refund 11s. 6d. to Sarah Dillingham because of the over-payment, nevertheless as Shatswell maintained the contrary and as he (Saltonstall) did not wish to differ with his neighbor over the matter, he would "buy his peace" by taking the debt upon himself.

* Probate Records of Essex County, I: 7.

Edward Dillingham of Plymouth died before June 1, 1667, when his will was proved. He was anxious that a proper return be made to certain people in England who had sent horses and cattle to him in New England as an investment and he lists their names and parishes. Most of them lived in Bitteswell, Leire, Luttersworth, Shawell and Cottesbach, co. Leicester, and it would seem most probable that Edward Dillingham lived in that neighborhood before his emigration. One of the Bitteswell investors was Thomas Shatswell and one of those in Leire was Edward Clark. The name Shatswell is very uncommon in England and, except for a few instances in co. Somerset, it is almost exclusively found in a few neighboring parishes in co. Northampton, including Kilsby and Ashby St. Legers. A few miles to the north, also in co. Northampton, is Sibbertoft which is known to have been the home of the Curwin emigrants to New England. All of these parishes are within an eight mile radius of the point where the counties of Leicester, Northampton and Warwick come together, and also included in this circle is Hillmorton, co. Warwick, the home of the Perkins family of Ipswich. It is evident that it was a focus for Puritan emigration.*

The exact relationship of these people to each other can only be determined, with good luck, by investigation in England. As will be shown later, however, John Shatswell called Theophilus Shatswell his brother, a Curwen (probably Matthias, who had been in Ipswich, and not Hon. George Curwen of Salem) his brother, Mary Webster his sister, and left a contingent remainder of his property to the children of "my brother and sisters" here in New England. Theophilus Shatswell called William Sargent his brother and Sargent's son-in-law, Philip Watson-Challis, his kinsman. Edward Clark, who was very close to the Shatswell family, was called uncle by Theophilus Shatswell's son-in-law.

2. JOHN SHATSWELL, inasmuch as his son was contemplating marriage in 1646, was probably born about 1600. From the wording of his will it is apparent that he was twice married, his first wife of unknown name being the mother of his son

* Since this article was written a *Genealogy of the Dillingham Family in New England* has been published by Winthrop Alexander. John Dillingham of Ipswich and Edward Dillingham of Plymouth were brothers, sons of Rev. Henry Dillingham, the rector of Cottesbach, co. Leicester, who also owned a freehold estate in the neighboring parish of Bitteswell. An examination of the parish registers of Cottesbach and Bitteswell, both beginning in 1558, should be very profitable but is impossible to arrange at present.

Richard and his second wife, Johan ———, surviving as his widow.

Shatswell was a very early settler in Ipswich, for on September 3, 1633, he was fined by the General Court for being "distempered in drink." He seems to have led a model life thereafter. His house-lot in Ipswich, on which he had built by 1635, was six acres lying between the lots of Mr. Wade and Mr. Firman. The town also granted him a planting lot on Town hill which he sold to John Baker before 1638, and a portion of land sixty rods broad next to Henry Short on the path leading to the Merrimac river. He had a servant named Andrew Alling. In 1646 Dr. John Clarke had trouble collecting from Shatswell for medical services, and we learn that he had charged £3: 2: 0 for curing Shatswell's son, £3 for the servant's cure and 8s. for "physic" or drugs.

John Satchwell made his will February 2, 1646/7, and it was probated March 30, 1647. He left to his son Richard all his houses and lands with their appurtenances, except a twenty-five acre lot on the sea and sixteen acres of pasture beyond Muddy river, which were to go to his wife Johan and "her Issue if she have any" and, in default of such issue, to return to Richard. His wife was to have the use of the homestead for life, or until she could conveniently provide otherwise for herself, and particularly "if Richard shall not marry with Rebecca Tuttle which is now intended." If his wife Johan and son Richard should both die without issue such land as remained was to be divided between "my brother & sisters' children that are here in New England." To brother Theophilus Satchwell, his best cloth suit and coat. To brother Curwin, his stuff suit. To sister Webster, about seven yards of stuff to make a suit and a young heifer thought to be with calf. Executrix: his wife. Witnesses: Jonathan Wade, James Howe. The inventory, totalling about £480, lists silver spoons, four bibles and several other books, much land, a good stock of domestic animals and "a swarme of bees."*

Joannah Shatswell, widow, died in Ipswich April 17, 1673.

Child, by a first wife:

- i. RICHARD, b. in England about 1625; m. Rebecca Tuttle; d. in Ipswich July 13, 1694. In 1653 he rented the Ipswich house of his wife's aunt, widow Joanna Tuttle, for a two year term, subletting to Robert Smith. The rent was to be £24 in corn each year and Simon Tuttle, as attorney for his mother, was obliged to sue for it, Shatswell in turn suing Smith. In 1656 he

* Probate Records of Essex County, 1: 80.

had several difficulties with his neighbor Richard Kimball. Kimball struck the Shatswell's maid and sued Richard and Rebecca for slander. We hear his own words when William Dellow, his servant, was in court for beating his master's ox so that the poor animal died—"Now, William, you may see fruits of cruelty." He had other servants, Robert Punnill and Mary Parker. He was guilty of contempt of court in 1659 and acknowledged his error. In 1657 the town had given him authority to set up a mill for breaking hemp, and in 1676 he had a fulling mill on Egypt river above the road to Rowley. A neighborhood case, with much testimony, resulted when Mark Quilter ejected Rebecca Shatswell from his house where she was visiting Quilter's wife, in 1664. He was a member of the trial jury in 1671 and the grand jury in 1673.

Richard Satchwell made his will June 28 and it was proved August 6, 1694. He left to his son John the land "he now enjoys." To his daughter Joanna, £8. To his daughter Sarah, on condition she quits the acreage her late husband improved, £60, otherwise £50. The daughters were to receive their portions within seven years of his decease. Remainder, both real and personal, to his son Richard, who is named executor. Witnesses: Thomas Lull, Senr., John Whipple, Junr., John Stamford.*

Children, order uncertain:

1. *Mary*; d. in Ipswich Sept. 1657.
2. *Richard*; d. in Ipswich Jan. 28, 1662.
3. *Sarah*, b. Aug. 19, 1658; m. in Ipswich June 9, 1681, Roger Ringe.
4. *John*; m. (1) in Ipswich June 20, 1684, Sarah Younglove; m. (2) before 1699/1700 Lydia ———.
5. *Johanna*, b. Feb. 21, 1664; d. (Hannah) "an ancient maid" Aug. 18, 1720.
6. *Richard*; m. in Newbury Dec. 17, 1696, Eleanor Cheney of Newbury who m., secondly, Thomas Safford of Newbury Oct. 7, 1698.

3. **THEOPHILUS SHATSWELL** was born about 1614. His name first appears upon the Ipswich records in 1639, and in 1642 he was one of the young soldiers sent by the town to disarm the Indian chief Passaconoway. With Edward Chapman and Thomas Perkins he sued Roger Cheston in the court of March, 1646. In 1648 he was a subscriber to Major General Denison's salary.

By 1650 he had moved to Haverhill where he took the Oath of Fidelity and served on a Norfolk county trial jury, as he did in 1652 (dismissed) and 1653. He was possibly not a man of average good health, for in 1653, when he would have been only thirty-nine years old, the town of Haverhill gave him "liberty to train or not according as he is able, provided he pay 12d. a day to the Haverhill company." In 1653 he also sold his dwelling-house in Ipswich, near the north end of the town, to William Marchent who had been his tenant.

* Essex Probate, 303: 288.

He was not often in the courts. In 1653 he was sued by Job Clement for mowing and carrying away Clement's hay in the Hawkes meadow and in 1654 he sued Tristram Coffin for not insuring him three acres of accommodation according to promise. He lost both cases. He was appointed Edward Clark's attorney in 1659. In 1659, aged forty-five, he testified that he had made an agreement for the sale of a house between merchant Joseph Jewett of Rowley and his kinsman Richard Shatswell. A partner in a Haverhill saw-mill as early as 1651, he and Daniel Ladd erected a mill at Spiggot river in 1659. He was a signatory to the petition in favor of the liberal Robert Pike.

Shatswell's wife Susanna is said to have been born Susanna Bosworth, but there seems to be no contemporary evidence for this statement, which was possibly deduced from the fact that Haniel Bosworth lived with them and was an administrator of Susanna's estate. Theophilus Shatswell died in Haverhill August 17, 1663.

His will, dated June 20, 1663, was proved October 13, 1663. He left to his eldest daughter Mary, for life, various parcels of land totalling three hundred and fifteen acres, a young gray horse and the use of a pair of bullocks for two years. To his daughter Lydia, for life, the farm beyond Spickett river, the mare called her mother's mare and other things already received. To Haniel Bosworth, his portion of Hawkes meadow and the third division of upland belonging to Savage's land and £10 "if he stay with me or mine untill he be one and twenty years of age." Executors: wife Susanna and daughter Hannah, "all my other Lands, houseing, catle & all other herrididements." "My lands after the decease of my daughters Shall goe to there children." Overseers: Brother Wilyam Sargent, Kinsman Lefttenent Philip Challis. Witnesses: Jonathan Singletary, Edward Clarke. Inventory taken September 3, 1663, by John Emery, sr., and John Eaton, sr., lists a great quantity of land and a well-stocked farm and totals £759.*

Susanna Shatswell died before she had completed administration, and Haniel Bosworth and John Griffin were granted administration of her estate October 8, 1672. It was valued at £203.† Griffin as administrator sued William Carr for debt in 1676, but was nonsuited.

* Essex Probate, No. 25, 121.

† Essex Probate, No. 25, 120.

Children:

- i. MARY; m. (1) in Haverhill June 30, 1662, William Dell, whose name is variously spelled—Deale, Dello, Dellow and Dilloway—and who was an unpleasant character who had been a servant of her cousin Richard Shatswell in Ipswich. John Griffin deposed that he had heard Theophilus Shatswell say that he would never let his daughter Mary have any estate so that her husband William Delle could pay his debts with it. This deposition must be out of place in the Essex County Court Files as it is with the case Shatswell v. Dellow, March 1659, three years before the marriage of Dell and Mary Shatswell. Dell was always in difficulties and once, at least, spent an uncomfortable hour in the pillory. William Deale of Haverhill made his will Feb. 14, 1664, leaving his estate to his wife Mary and their two children and naming his wife executrix, but she refused to have anything to do with the will and administration was granted to Edward Clarke Oct. 10, 1665. Dell died April 15, 1665. She m. (2) Nicholas Smith of Exeter and (3) Jan. 10, 1675, Charles Runlett of Exeter.

Children, born in Haverhill:

1. *Abial Deale*, b. July 28, 1662.
 2. *Theophilus Deale*, b. March 1, 1663/4; d. July 20, 1665.
- ii. LYDIA; m. in Haverhill Sept. 17, 1663, John Griffin. (*See Griffin.*)
- iii. HANNAH, b. in Haverhill July 6 or Aug. 5, 1651; m. Richard Mercer of Haverhill March 18, 1668/9; d. in childbirth Dec. 27, 1670, her husband dying March 29, 1671, leaving their baby son, Abial Mercer. Edward Clark was appointed administrator of the Mercer estate and entered an inventory Oct. 10, 1671. In May, 1671, Clarke drew up a petition to the Supreme Judicial Court, stating that Theophilus Shatswell had left his daughter Hannah practically nothing and that, as he had named her joint executrix with her mother, it had been supposed that she would have the homestead and other lands after her mother's death, but that the other heirs opposed this, stating that the lands were entailed on their children. He sets forth the plight of the baby Abial, whose parents had died leaving him penniless. He asks for advice and direction. In 1683, Haniel Bosworth, who had been appointed Abial's guardian, asked that the estate be settled on Abial and that Israel Ela be appointed guardian and administrator in his stead. Having grown to manhood Abial himself was appointed administrator of the Shatswell estate in 1704, his two aunts having renounced their rights, and it is pleasant to learn that there remained, apparently for his undisputed possession, his grandparents' home and other property worth £190.*

Child:

1. *Abial Mercer*, b. Dec. 27, 1670; m. in Haverhill Jan. 3, 1694/5, Abigail Marsh.

* Probate Records of Essex County, I: 424-8.

The Ancestry of Sarah Stone

FOREWORD

James Patten and Sarah Stone, my great-grandparents, were married in Arundel in 1775. Mrs. Patten died before 1789, and no tradition of her personality or life has been transmitted to her descendants.

The late Mr. J. Gardner Bartlett, the compiler of two monumental Stone genealogies, saw and approved the Stone material in this pamphlet not long before his death and gave me the facts in regard to William⁸ Stone of Bristol, R. I. Mr. Harold Clarke Durrell has kindly supplied gravestone inscriptions from Kennebunkport; Mrs. Mary Lovering Holman should be credited for the early generations of the Marston family which can be found in fuller form in her "Marston English Ancestry"; and the discovery of the English home of the Haskell family is the work of Col. Charles E. Banks who also obtained the Lawes items from the Norwich parish registers.

W. G. D.

Portland, Maine,
June 25, 1930.

THE ANCESTRY OF SARAH STONE

STONE

1. JOHN STONE was living in Salem in 1636, and possibly earlier. He kept the ferry from Massey's Cove, where he lived, to Bass River (Beverly) in that year and until 1639. In 1636 he was fined under a law against taking excessive wages, this economic measure being thought necessary in the colony because of the tremendous labor to be performed and the scarcity of hands to perform it. He shared in the land grants of 1636, 1637 and 1639. Several lawsuits are recorded in which he figures — as plaintiff against Richard Hollingsworth (1636), John Luff (1640), and John Thorndike (1640), and as defendant in cases brought by Thorndike (1640) and Frances Perry (1641) — but the particulars and evidence were not recorded or have not survived. William Bowdich was fined ten shillings in 1641 for misinforming the court and causing John Stone to be unjustly fined. Stone was freed from military training in 1650, because of his age and an "infirmity in an arm." In 1653 John Stone, Sr., John Stone, Jr., and Nathaniel Stone brought an action against Ralph Elwood but withdrew it before trial. The latter part of his life was doubtless spent at "Cape Ann side" (Beverly) where, in 1662, he sold seven acres of land to William Dodge, but with use and occupation reserved during the life of "Eelener my now wife."* He died between 1667, when the last record of him is found, and 1677 when his son John and his wife are referred to as "John Stone, Sr. and wife Abigail."

John Stone was married at least twice. His two sons, John and Nathaniel, who are identified with him in New England, were born in 1622 and 1631 approximately and respectively. Some time after 1630, but whether in England or America it is uncertain, he married his last wife, who was Ellen (or Eleanor)

* Essex Deeds, 3 : 60.

widow of William Haskell of Charlton Musgrove, Somerset, where seven Haskell children were baptized between 1613 and 1628, and where their father died in 1630.* Roger, William and Mark Haskell, and probably their sister Joan, came to New England with their mother and doubtless the younger Haskells were members of Stone's family of seven persons in 1637. "Ellin wife of John Stone Sr" testified in a suit brought by Eunice Porter against Osmund Trask in 1660.† Roger Haskell in his will made in 1667 leaves to "my son Marke . . . land my father in law (step-father) John Stone liue(s) upon after his decease." Roger Haskell married a daughter of John and Elizabeth Hardy of Salem and it is certain that by "father-in-law" step-father is meant, this being the customary seventeenth-century phrase for that relationship as well as for the father of a wife or husband.

Children, born in England (doubtless others) :—

2. i. JOHN, b. about 1622.
3. ii. NATHANIEL, b. about 1631.

2. JOHN² STONE (*John*¹) was born about the year 1622.‡ He married Abigail Dixey, daughter of Capt. William and Anna Dixey, about 1652, and lived in Beverly, where he kept an inn from 1673 to 1682. He is called a seaman in 1677, and it is probable that the business of the inn was the principal care of his wife. It is recorded that a rally of the militia, under Capt. Dixey, took place at the Stone inn at eight o'clock on the morning of January 14, 1676.§

Stone was an overseer of Robert Morgan's will in 1672. He took the oath of fidelity in 1677. He died before September 25, 1691, when his widow and administratrix presented an inventory, taken by Paul Thorndike, Zachariah Herrick and Nehemiah Grover, amounting to £228:10. Abigail Stone, whose bondsmen were Joseph Morgan and Sergeant Balch, died before completing her trust and administration was granted to Samuel Stone "now eldest son," July 12, 1703. He presented an account and a division of the estate on March 13, 1703/4, the heirs being sons Samuel (double portion), Jonathan and Nehemiah, daughters Abigail Briscoe and Anna Stone, and grandchildren Han-

* The children of William Haskell were baptized as follows: Roger, 1613; Cicely, 1616; William, 1618; Mark, 1621; Dorothy, 1623; Elizabeth, 1626; Joan, 1628.

† Records and Files of the County Courts of Essex County, Mass., II : 252 — hereafter referred to as Records and Files, etc.

‡ Records and Files, etc., VI : 349.

§ Records and Files, etc., VI : 374.

nah, Abigail and William Stone, children of William Stone, deceased.*

Abigail (Dixey) Stone's age was estimated as forty-three in 1678 and about forty in 1679, in legal cases in which she testified, from the evidence in which we learn that she employed two maids, Sarah Riggs and Mary Barrett, and that included in her finery were "a great handkerchief with spots in it, a lace cap with running strings, and a long neck-cloth laced at both ends."† She died between 1691 and 1703.

Children:—

- i. JOHN, b. 25: 9: 1654, in Salem; d. before 1703/4, *s. p.*
4. ii. SAMUEL, b. 15: 9: 1658, in Salem.
5. iii. WILLIAM.
- iv. JONATHAN, bapt. 10: 3: 1668, in Beverly; m. Hannah Herrick June 21, 1706; probably d. *s. p.*; she d. Feb. 9, 1746, aged seventy-nine, his widow.
6. v. NEHEMIAH, bapt. May 29, 1670, in Beverly.
- vi. ABIGAIL, b. about 1672; m. Capt. Robert Briscoe of Beverly before 1692;‡ d. June 1, 1724, aged fifty-two. Capt. Briscoe was a man of large wealth and of prominence in the community, serving the town as selectman, assessor, treasurer and representative to the General Court. He presented the town with a bell in 1712 and the church with a silver communion cup in 1718, and the elegance of his house was still remembered a century after his death. A street and a school (Briscoe Hall) in Beverly bore his name in the middle of the nineteenth century. His second wife was Elizabeth (Leavitt) Dudley of Exeter, to which town Capt. Briscoe moved his residence. He died in 1729, and remembered by will Zachariah, Samuel and Robert Stone, Abigail Stevens and Elizabeth Ober, nephews and nieces of his first wife, and also left £20 to the poor of Beverly. His widow m. Rev. John Odlin.
- vii. ISRAEL, bapt. 27: 4: 1675; d. before 1703/4, *s. p.*
- viii. ANNA, bapt. Dec. 21, 1679; living, unmarried, in Beverly in 1703/4.

3. NATHANIEL² STONE (*John*¹) was born about 1631. He married Remember Corning, daughter of Ensign Samuel and Elizabeth Corning of Beverly. He served as constable of Salem in 1667 and was made a freeman there in 1668. He served on the trial jury in 1678 and on the grand jury in 1688. He died March 8, 1717/8, aged about eighty-seven. He provided for his children during his life time and the probate records contain no papers relating to his estate. He and his wife deeded eight acres to their son-in-law Caleb Wallis in 1706, a dwelling-house and thirty acres to their son Daniel and ten acres and a new dwelling-house to their son Nathaniel in 1708, and four acres, a dwelling-house and orchard to their daughter Elizabeth Clarke in 1713/4.§

* Essex Probate, 303 : 72; 308 : 117-8.

† Records and Files, etc., VII : 49, 52, 53.

‡ Essex Deeds, 11 : 110.

§ Essex Deeds, 20 : 132; 23 : 273; 26 : 22; 36 : 81.

Children:—

- i. ELIZABETH, b. March 24, 1658/9, in Salem; m. William Clarke, sailor, of Beverly.

Children, born in Beverly:—

1. *William Clarke*, bapt. July 7, 1678.
2. *Elizabeth Clarke*, b. Oct. 22, 1681.
3. *Hester Clarke*, b. June 11, 1684.
4. *Nathaniel Clarke*, b. Sept. 13, 1686.
5. *Mary Clarke*, b. April 15, 1689.
6. *Daniel Clarke*, b. June 8, 1690.
7. *Joshua Clarke*, bapt. Feb. 25, 1693/4.
8. *Joshua Clarke*, bapt. June 23, 1695.
9. *Joshua Clarke*, bapt. June 6, 1697.

7. ii. JOHN, b. 20: 2: 1661.
 8. iii. NATHANIEL, b. 15: 7: 1663.
 9. iv. SAMUEL, bapt. 29: 7: 1666.
 v. SARAH, bapt. Aug. 1, 1669, in Beverly; m. Caleb Wallis Dec. 12, 1687; he d. in 1715, leaving an estate of £528 to his widow, sons Joshua, Nathaniel and Daniel and daughters Abigail and Sarah, who divided the property in 1722;* she d. before 1736.

Children, born in Beverly:—

1. *Sarah Wallis*, b. Aug. 28, 1694; d. in infancy.
2. *Caleb Wallis*, b. Oct. 14, 1695; d. Sept., 1714.
3. *Joshua Wallis*, b. March 5, 1695/6 (1696/7).
4. *Sarah Wallis*, bapt. Dec. 18, 1698; d. in infancy.
5. *Nathaniel Wallis*, b. Dec. 30, 1699.
6. *Daniel Wallis*, b. July 1, 1701.
7. *Abigail Wallis*, b. Nov. 18, 1702; m. Thomas Ellingwood.
8. *Sarah Wallis*, b. Nov. 21, 1709; bapt. as *Anna* Nov. 27, 1709; m. William Harris.

- vi. PHEBE, bapt. April 21, 1672; m. Daniel Larcom at Chebacco May 29, 1693; he d. in 1746, bequeathing his estate to his widow and two sons;† d. in 1756 aged eighty-five.

Children:—

1. *Joseph Larcom*, bapt. May 27, 1694.
2. *Benjamin Larcom*, b. June 22, 1712.

- vii. MARY, bapt. May 17, 1674; d. in Beverly June 18, 1717, aged about forty-two.
 viii. REBECCA, bapt. 2: 3: 1676.
 10. ix. DANIEL, bapt. May 18, 1679.

4. SAMUEL³ STONE (*John², John¹*) was born in Salem 15: 9: 1658. He married Elizabeth² Herrick, daughter of Zachary and Mary (Dodge) Herrick on March 11, 1683/4, in Beverly. She was born March 2, 1657. Samuel Stone was a sailor, in the coasting trade. He died November 23, 1717, aged fifty-nine, and his widow, Elizabeth, and son Zachary were appointed administrators on January 6, 1717. They presented an inventory

* Essex Probate, 311 : 259; 313 : 472.

† Essex Probate, 329 : 239.

of £764 on March 3, 1718/9. The estate was twice divided, on April 11, 1720, and on December 30, 1730, between the widow, sons Zachariah, Samuel and Robert, and daughters Abigail Stevens and Elizabeth Ober.*

Children, born in Beverly: —

- i. **ZACHARIAH**, b. May 23, 1685; m. Jane Curtis, daughter of Samuel and Elizabeth Curtis of Beverly, Sept. 9, 1706; an innkeeper in Beverly; d. June 20, 1734, aged forty-eight; administration granted to Jane Stone, widow, Aug. 19, 1724, Henry Herrick and Samuel Stone being her sureties; inventory of £883, including two negro servants; estate divided between the widow, eldest son William, sons Samuel, Robert and Andrew, and daughters Elizabeth, Jane and Abigail.† Jane (Curtis) Stone m. Ebenezer Kimball of Bradford Dec. 18, 1735.

Children, born in Beverly: —

1. *Zachariah*, b. Sept. 21, 1708; pub. with Anne Elliot Oct. 18, 1730, three weeks before his death; d. Nov. 8, 1730, aged twenty-two.
 2. *William*, b. March 19, 1710/1; m. Mary Tuck March 5, 1735/6; in the coasting trade and drowned at New Castle in 1738; administration granted to his widow Mary and William Tuck on Jan. 16, 1738/9;‡ widow Mary was buried Oct. 7, 1794, aged seventy-nine years, ten months; two children (a) Zachariah b. Jan 21, 1736/7, d. 1755, and (b) Mary, b. June 10, 1738, d. Sept. 24, 1800, aged sixty-two.
 3. *Elizabeth*, b. Jan. 18, 1712/3; m. William Gage, int. Nov. 1, 1730.
 4. *Jean*, b. April 22, 1716; d. Nov. 7, 1718.
 5. *Samuel*, b. May 28, 1718; m. Mehitable Butman Dec. 5, 1736; drowned at Squam with cousin Robert Stone and a Portugese servant in 1743; administration was granted to his widow, Mehitable, and dower assigned her Feb. 5, 1743/4; seven children born in Beverly between 1737 and 1744, of whom three were living in 1744;§ she m. Matthias Price, and is mentioned in the will of her son Samuel in 1758.¶
 6. *Jean*, b. Oct. 19, 1720; m. Joseph Leach Sept. 28, 1737.
 7. *Abigail*, b. Sept. 12, 1722; m. Andrew Knowlton of Manchester, int. Oct. 31, 1741.
 8. *Robert*, b. Feb. 9, 1724/5; killed at "La Guira," March, 1742/3; administration granted to brother Andrew Stone Nov. 14, 1748.¶
 9. *Andrew*, b. April 17, 1727; m. Abigail Ellinwood May 22, 1744; buried March 17, 1781; eight children born in Beverly between 1747 and 1769; she was buried April 9, 1814, aged eighty-nine.
- ii. **SAMUEL**, b. April 15, 1687; m. Lucy Woodbury in Beverly May 21, 1719; cordwainer; d. in 1745; she was probably the "widow of Samuel Stone" whose death is recorded in 1747.

* Essex Probate, 312 : 145, 256; 313 : 181; 316 : 190.

† Essex Probate, 318 : 118; 320 : 117.

‡ Essex Probate, 324 : 135.

§ Essex Probate, 323 : 137; 323 : 423; 326 : 122.

¶ Worcester County Wills, No. 56893.

¶ Essex Probate, 328 : 238.

Children (one of whom d. in 1732 and two in 1737):—

1. *Elizabeth*, b. April 1, 1720; d. in infancy.
 2. *Elizabeth*, b. March 3, 1721/2.
 3. *Samuel*, b. June 13, 1724; m. Mary Chapman Jan. 21, 1745; nine children b. in Beverly 1746-1770.
 4. *Isaac*, b. Sept. 1, 1726.
 5. *Lucy*, b. Nov. 5, 1730.
- iii. JOHN, b. May 23, 1689; d. s. p. before 1720.
- iv. ROBERT, b. April 28, 1692; m. Elizabeth Elliot, daughter of William and Mary (Parker) Elliot of Beverly, Jan. 23, 1723; he was in the coasting trade; d. Aug. 7, 1747, aged fifty-five; administration of his estate was granted to his widow, Elizabeth, on Sept. 14, 1747; she was buried March 24, 1787, aged eighty-eight; her will, dated April 20, 1786, mentions her grandson John Stone, granddaughter Dorcas Stone, daughter of her son Zachariah, Zachariah's other children, and her grandson (in-law) John Low, who was named executor; the estate of Robert Stone was also divided in 1787 between the representatives of his two sons John and Zachariah, both deceased.*

Children:—

1. *Robert*, b. Sept. 27, 1725; drowned at Squam Dec. 7, 1743, aged eighteen.
 2. *John*, b. Sept. 8, 1728; m. Hannah Rea Feb. 18, 1752; d. Dec. 27, 1754, "in his twenty-seventh year"; she m. John Lovitt, 2nd, Nov. 2, 1758; their son John Stone was mentioned in his grandmother Stone's will.
 3. *Zachariah*, b. Oct. 2, 1731; m. Susanna Foster April 25, 1754; housewright; d. of "St. Anthony's Fire" and buried Feb. 20, 1786, aged fifty-four; estate divided in 1787 between his son Joseph and his daughters Elizabeth Low, Susanna Stanley, Dorcas, Emma and Hannah Stone.†
- v. ABIGAIL, b. Nov. 17, 1695; m. John Stevens Nov. 27, 1717; she inherited the Beverly home of her uncle Robert Briscoe; d. Dec. 6, 1770, in her seventy-sixth year; he was buried Feb. 18, 1778, aged ninety-four.

Children:—

1. *Robert Stevens*, b. Dec. 30, 1719; d. March 27, 1720.
 2. *John Stevens*, b. Oct. 26, 1721; d. April 18, 1727.
 3. *Elizabeth Stevens*, b. Sept. 8, 1723; d. Dec. 18, 1736.
 4. *Abigail Stevens*, b. July 22, 1726.
 5. *John Stevens*, b. Oct. 16, 1729; d. Jan. 19, 1731.
 6. *Brisco Stevens*, b. Oct. 10, 1731; d. Dec. 17, 1736.
 7. *Andrew Stevens*, b. Nov. 21, 1733; d. Dec. 13, 1733.
 8. *Ruth Stevens*, b. Jan. 1, 1735.
 9. *Thomas Stevens*, b. Aug. 9, 1737.
- vi. ELIZABETH, b. Aug. 1, 1698; m. Samuel Ober May 14, 1719; he d. Sept. 26, 1725, in his thirty-third year; she m. (2) Andrew Elliott Sept. 5, 1738; d. April 16, 1747, aged forty-eight; he d. Jan. 7, 1747/8, aged sixty-four.

* Essex Probate, 359 : 39, 243; 323 : 279; 327 : 419.

† Essex Probate, 359 : 245.

Children, by first husband, born in Beverly:—

1. *Andrew Ober*, b. July 4, 1722; d. Dec. 5, 1731 (child of widow Elizabeth).
2. *Elizabeth Ober*, b. Feb. 26, 1723/4.

Children, by second husband, born in Beverly:—

3. *Samuel Elliott*, b. March 17, 1740.
4. *Henry Elliott*, b. June 3, 1742.

5. WILLIAM^s STONE (*John², John¹*) was baptized in Salem in 1665. He moved to Bristol, Rhode Island, and had three children, but was dead in 1703/4, when his brother Samuel divided the estate of their father, in which distribution the children of William shared.* The name of his wife has not been found.

Children, born in Bristol, R. I.:—

- i. HANNAH, b. March 26, 1687.
- ii. ABIGAIL, b. July 9, 1689.
- iii. WILLIAM, b. June 27, 1693; m. Mehitable Lane; d. Jan. 31, 1772, at Norton, Mass.; she d. Oct. 24, 1775, at Norton.

Children, born in Norton:—

1. *Hannah*, b. Sept. 12, 1718.
2. *Mehitable*, b. March 17, 1719/20.
3. *Abigail*, b. July 30, 1722.
4. *Sarah*, b. Aug. 25, 1724.
5. *William*, b. Jan. 16, 1726/7.
6. *Nathaniel*.

6. NEHEMIAH^s STONE (*John², John¹*) was baptized May 29, 1670, in Beverly. He married Lydia^s Hart, daughter of Jonathan and Lydia (Neale) Hart of Salem. He and his wife deeded to her brother Jonathan Hart all their interest in the estate of her grandfather Neale on July 28, 1714.† He was a mariner and lived in Beverly. He deeded to his brother-in-law Robert Briscoe the house and land where Briscoe was then living in 1720, probably the house mentioned in his father's inventory as being in Nehemiah's possession in 1703/4.‡

Nehemiah Stone's estate was granted to his son Jonathan for administration on January 1, 1732/3, Samuel Stone and Benjamin Butland being his sureties. His widow died between September, 1732, and July, 1734.

Children, bapt. in Beverly:—

- i. LYDIA, bapt. March 1, 1695/6; m. Abraham Whittaker of Beverly Dec. 17, 1716; he was probably that son of Abraham Whittaker of Haverhill who was captured by Indians in 1691 when he was

* Essex Probate, 308 : 177-8.

† Essex Deeds, 28 : 23.

‡ Essex Deeds, 37 : 109.

seven years old and was still in captivity in 1701;* he d. before 1724, when on Dec. 8 she m. Edward Whittington of Marblehead; she probably m. (3) William Bennett of Manchester Aug. 26, 1729, at Ipswich.

Child, by first husband:—

- i. *Abraham Whittaker*, b. Sept. 29, 1717; a cooper, living in Beverly, in 1754, when he sold land which descended to him from his mother, Lydia Whittaker, late of Beverly, deceased.
- ii. NEHEMIAH, bapt. March 1, 1695/6; m. ——— in Salem, Oct. 13, 1745; d. June 18, 1747, aged about fifty-five.
- iii. SARAH, bapt. March 1, 1695/6; m. William Prince March 12, 1718/9; he d. Jan. 15, 1730/1, in his thirty-ninth year; she d. in 1742.

Children, born in Beverly:—

1. *Sarah Prince*, b. Dec. 2, 1719.
2. *Mary Prince*, b. Sept. 16, 1723.
3. *William Prince*, b. Jan. 28, 1726/7; d. 1731/2.
4. *Lydia Prince*, bapt. June 8, 1729; d. July 12, 1729.
- iv. ISRAEL, b. April 10, 1700; m. Anna Morgan May 5, 1721; she d. June 6, 1727, aged twenty-eight.

Child, born in Beverly:—

1. *Anna*, b. Sept. 10, 1723.
11. v. JONATHAN, bapt. Sept. 2, 1702.
- vi. AMGAIL, b. July 7, 1705; m. Zebulon Hill, son of Roger and Elizabeth Hill of Beverly, int. Oct. 27, 1728; he d. May 20, 1740, aged about forty-one.

Children, born in Beverly:—

1. *Henry Hill*, b. Aug. 22, 1730.
2. *Zebulon Hill*, b. Feb. 26, 1731/2.
3. *Lydia Hill*, b. Feb. 28, 1733/4.
- vii. EXPERIENCE, b. Aug. 29, 1707; m. Edward Bond March 13, 1734.

Children:—

1. *Edward Bond*, b. Jan. 10, 1735, in Beverly.
2. *Edward Bond*, bapt. Jan. 1, 1737/8, in Beverly.
- viii. JOHN, b. Feb. 21, 1711/2; no further record.
12. ix. DIXEY, b. Nov. 20, 1713.

7. JOHN^s STONE (*Nathaniel², John¹*) was born in Salem 20: 2: 1661. He married Hester Gaines, daughter of John and Mary (Treadwell) Gaines of Ipswich April 12, 1683. She died in 1689 or 1690, and he married as his second wife Sarah Gale, daughter of Edmund and Sarah (Dixey) Gale of Marblehead. She died before 1726, when, on April 21, he married widow Jane (Stacy) Stanley, who died, his widow, in 1749, aged nearly eighty.

* Historical Collections of Essex Institute, Vol. 49, pp. 42-5.

On May 4, 1736, John Cleaves of Beverly was appointed guardian of John Stone, aged seventy-two, *non compos mentis*. He was sufficiently sane to make a will two weeks later, however, and his death occurred on July 28, 1736. The will, which was probated on August 2, 1736, states his occupation as weaver, and leaves his property to his wife ("£50 as per indenture"), his nine daughters (named), and his grandsons Ambrose Allen, Ambrose Cleaves, Ambrose Patch, and Ambrose, Daniel, John and Ebenezer Stone. Mr. Robert Morgan and Mr. William Grover were appointed executors and they returned an inventory of £411. The estate was divided June 9, 1737.*

John Stone had seventy-nine recorded grandchildren:—

Children, by first wife, born in Beverly:—

- I. ESTHER, b. July 21, 1684; m. Richard Woodbury May 17, 1711; he d. in 1751, aged sixty-six.

Children:—

1. *Andrew Woodbury*, b. Feb. 23, 1711/2.
 2. *Sarah Woodbury*, b. July 19, 1713.
 3. *Josiah Woodbury*, b. March 29, 1715.
 4. *Gideon Woodbury*, b. March 21, 1716/7.
 5. *Jacob Woodbury*, b. June 9, 1719.
 6. *Daniel Woodbury*, b. March 27, 1721.
 7. *Mark Woodbury*, b. Sept. 29, 1722.
 8. *Esther Woodbury*, b. April 11, 1725.
 9. *John Woodbury*, b. Jan. 31, 1726/7.
 10. *Luke Woodbury*, bapt. April 11, 1731.
- II. JOHN, b. Aug. 27, 1686; m. Ruth Waldron of Wenham, int. May 18, 1712. He was a weaver. She applied for the administration of his estate Jan. 6, 1723/4, and filed an inventory of £106. In her account, dated Oct. 15, 1724, is a charge for bringing up "three young children." Probably the eldest son was already apprenticed at that time. She m. Stephen Patch of Wenham Oct. 21, 1728.

Children:—

1. *Daniel*; mentioned in his grandfather's will; m. Miriam Patch, his step-sister, daughter of Stephen and Ruth Patch of Wenham May 8, 1735; settled in Sutton.
 2. *John*, b. April 23, 1718; Ebenezer Waldron of Wenham was appointed his guardian May 22, 1735.†
 3. *Ebenezer*, bapt. Sept. 11, 1720; m. Sarah Crowell in Wenham June 21, 1742; cordwainer; children (a) Naomi, (b) Ruth and (c) Ebenezer b. in Wenham 1743-7; settled in Westford.
 4. *Ambrose*, bapt. May 26, 1723; his mother and step-father, Stephen Patch, were appointed his guardians Dec. 29, 1734.‡
- III. MARY, b. April 15, 1689; m. Joseph Hibbert, int. Dec. 23, 1716.

* Essex Probate, 320 : 314; 325 : 520; 322 : 76.

† Essex Probate, 317 : 125.

‡ Essex Probate, 317 : 117.

Children, born in Beverly:—

1. *Henry Hibbert*, b. July 21, 1717.
2. *Samuel Hibbert*, b. April 21, 1719.
3. *Esther Hibbert*, b. Nov. 15, 1720.

Children, by second wife, born in Beverly:—

- iv. **PRISCILLA**, b. Oct. 27, 1690; m. John Patch of Beverly Dec. 5, 1723; he d. before May, 1732; she d. in 1764.

Children:—

1. *Nicholas Patch*, bapt. Aug. 29, 1725.
 2. *Ambrose Patch*, bapt. July 17, 1726.
 3. *Susanna Patch*, bapt. July 27, 1729.
 4. *Nicholas Patch*, bapt. July 9, 1732.
 5. *Charity Patch* (daughter of widow Priscilla), bapt. Feb. 23, 1734/5.
- v. **EDMUND**, bapt. 10: 11: 1691/2; d. *s. p.* before 1732.
- vi. **SARAH**, b. April 12, 1693; m. Ebenezer Cleaves of Beverly, weaver, Jan. 15, 1712/3; she d. before 1744, when he m. (2) widow Anne Stevens of Gloucester on March 4; he d. in 1760, aged sixty-six.

Children, born in Beverly:—

1. *A child*, d. June 17, 1714.
 2. *A child*, d. May, 1715.
 3. *Margaret Cleaves*, b. Nov. 17, 17(17).
 4. *Ambrose Cleaves*, b. Dec. 1, 1718.
 5. *Sarah Cleaves*, b. Feb. 4, 1720/1.
 6. *Ebenezer Cleaves*, b. April 18, 1723.
 7. *Edmund Cleaves*, b. Feb. 12, 1724/5.
 8. *Sarah Cleaves*, b. June 6, 1728.
 9. *Robert Cleaves*, b. Sept. 28, 1730.
 10. *Martha Cleaves*, b. May 24, 1733.
 11. *Anna Cleaves*, bapt. July 18, 1736.
- vii. **MIRIAM**, b. April 9, 1695; m. Samuel Hoskins March 15, 1715/6; he d. Nov. 11, 1716, aged about twenty-six; she m. (2) Jonathan Cole of Beverly, tailor, Jan. 1, 1722; he was buried Feb. 20, 1779, aged eighty-one; she was buried March 5, 1779, aged eighty-five.

Child, by first husband, born in Beverly:—

1. *Experience Hoskins*, b. Oct. 10, 1716.

Children, by second husband, born in Beverly:—

2. *Miriam Cole*, b. Nov. 25, 1723.
 3. *Jonathan Cole*, b. Feb. 11, 1724/5.
 4. *Experience Cole*, bapt. Oct. 9, 1726.
 5. *Samuel Cole*, b. Nov. 17, 1726.
 6. *Andrew Cole*, b. Nov. 7, 1729.
 7. *Solomon Cole*, b. Aug. 4, 1732.
 8. *Weeden Cole*, b. Dec. 11, 1734.
 9. *Anna Cole*, b. April 4, 1738.
- viii. **EUNICE**, b. Oct. 17, 1696; m. John Allen, husbandman, of Gloucester, son of Joseph and Rose (Howard) Allen, March 6, 1716/7; he d. in 1739, and she was living in 1746.

Children, born in Gloucester:—

1. *Ambrose Allen*, b. Sept. 7, 1718.
 2. *John Allen*, b. Oct. 4, 1720.
 3. *Rose Allen*, b. Oct. 23, 1722.
 4. *Nehemiah Allen*, b. March 1, 1723/4.
 5. *Eunice Allen*, b. June 29, 1726.
 6. *Sarah Allen*, b. Sept. 8, 1728.
 7. *Solomon Allen*, b. Jan. 12, 1730/1.
 8. *Jeremiah Allen*.
- ix. **AMBROSE**, b. 1698; d. March 17, 1717/8, aged about nineteen years, five months.
- x. **CHARITY**, b. Oct. 7, 1700; m. Benjamin Roundy, husbandman, of Beverly April 12, 1722; she d. in 1747; he m. Rebecca (Chapman) Giles, widow of Eleazer Giles (who d. at the siege of Louisburg in 1746), on May 23, 1748; he d. March 7, 1753, aged fifty-four.

Children, born in Beverly:—

1. *Robert Roundy*, b. March 18, 1722.
 2. *Deborah Roundy*, b. Nov. 24, 1724.
 3. *John Roundy*, b. Nov. 22, 1726.
 4. *Sarah Roundy*, b. Jan. 22, 1729.
 5. *Benjamin Roundy*, b. April 22, 1731.
 6. *Charity Roundy*, bapt. Aug. 26, 1733.
 7. *Azor Roundy*, bapt. Aug. 31, 1735.
 8. *Azor Roundy*, b. Nov. 16, 1737.
 9. *Charity Roundy*, b. Aug. 26, 1743.
- xi. **SUSANNA**, b. Aug. 20, 1702; m. Randall Preston, tailor, of Beverly July 2, 1723; he d. March 27, 1744, aged about forty-two; she d. in 1751.

Children, born in Beverly:—

1. *Susanna Preston*, b. July 2, d. July 16, 1723.
 2. *William Preston*, b. Sept. 2, 1725; d. in infancy.
 3. *Susanna Preston*, b. March 3, 1727.
 4. *Andrew Preston*, b. May 8, 1729.
 5. *John Preston*, b. May 16, d. June 5, 1731.
 6. *John Preston*, b. April 3, 1733.
 7. *Lucy Preston*, b. Aug. 12, 1735.
 8. *William Preston*, bapt. April 24, 1737.
 9. *Benjamin Preston*, bapt. April 1, 1739; d. in infancy.
 10. *Elizabeth Preston*, bapt. July 27, 1740; d. in infancy.
 11. *Elizabeth Preston*, bapt. Nov. 1, 1741.
 12. *Benjamin Preston*, b. Feb. 21, 1743/4.
- xii. **REMEMBER**, b. May 9, 1704; m. Benjamin Allen, tailor, son of Benjamin and Abigail (Hill) Allen of Manchester Aug. 5, 1725; he d. Nov. 30, 1760; she d. Sept., 1763.

Children, born in Manchester:—

1. *Joseph Allen*, bapt. Aug. 16, 1730.
2. *Andrew Allen*, bapt. May 20, 1733.
3. *Abigail Allen*, b. Aug. 22, 1735.
4. *Ezra Allen*, b. Jan. 15, 1737/8.
5. *Bartholomew Allen*, b. Jan. 15, 1737/8.
6. *Eunice Allen*, b. March 13, 1740.
7. *Andrew Allen*, b. April 15, 1743.
8. *Rachel Allen*, b. Sept. 15, 1746.

8. NATHANIEL^s STONE (*Nathaniel², John¹*) was born in Salem 15: 7: 1663. He married Mary Balch, daughter of Benjamin and Sarah (Gardner) Balch of Beverly on March 26, 1689. He was a turner by trade. His father deeded to him ten acres of land on which his dwelling-house stood on July 19, 1708.* Mary (Balch) Stone died on March 12, 1737, and her husband survived until February 23, 1741.

Children, born in Beverly:—

- i. SARAH, b. Feb. 1, 1690.
- ii. JOSIAH, b. Aug. 27, 1691; m. (1) Dorothy Fuller, int. July 21, 1715, in Ipswich; she d. in 1756; he m. (2) widow Elizabeth Simons of Boxford Nov. 9, 1757.

Children, born in Beverly:—

1. *Nathaniel*, b. Oct. 17, 1717; d. Feb. 11, 1718/9.
 2. *Dorothy*, b. Jan. 27, 1718/9; m. Jonathan Harris Dec. 6, 1739.
 3. *Mary*, b. Nov. 4, 1720; m. (1) William Wales in Salem Aug. 21, 1744; he d. 1746; she m. (2) John Williams, int. Oct. 30, 1748, in Beverly; widow Mary Williams d. Oct. 15, 1797, aged seventy-five years, eleven months, in Beverly.
 4. *Josiah*, b. Oct. 18, 1722, erroneously recorded in the town records as *Nathaniel*, son of *Nathaniel* and *Dorothy*; bapt. three days later as *Josiah*, son of *Josiah* and *Dorothy*; m. (1) Mary Davis of Wells, int. Oct. 22, 1748; m. (2) Martha Ashby Dec. 27, 1759; she was buried Jan. 24, 1802, aged eighty-two; he was buried March 20, 1807, aged eighty-three.
 5. *Elizabeth*, b. July 15, 1724; d. Nov. 30, 1725.
 6. *Elizabeth*, b. Oct. 10, 1726; probably that child of *Josiah* who d. in 1737.
- iii. NATHANIEL, bapt. 17: 7: 1693; d. in infancy.
 - iv. NATHANIEL, b. Nov. 30, 1694; d. in Gloucester June 20, 1716, aged nearly twenty-two.
 - v. BENJAMIN, b. July 10, 1696; m. (1) Judith Annable Oct. 14, 1721, in Ipswich; she was buried in Jan., 1738; he m. (2) Mrs. Sarah Edwards in Wenham Dec. 25, 1739; he d. April 4, 1777, in Ipswich, aged eighty.

Children (probably others), bapt. in Ipswich:—

1. *Mary*, bapt. Jan. 27, 1722/3.
 2. *Benjamin*, bapt. Dec. 7, 1729.
 3. *Hannah*, bapt. May, 1732.
 4. *John*, bapt. April, 1734.
- vi. RUTH, bapt. April 2, 1699; m. Luke Morgan March 6, 1717/8.
 - vii. DAVID, b. May 1, 1701; d. in infancy.
 - viii. HANNAH, bapt. May 24, 1702; m. William Stanley, son of John and Rebecca Stanley of Beverly, Sept. 2, 1724; she d. in 1752; he was buried Oct. 17, 1778, aged seventy-eight.

* Essex Deeds, 26 : 22.

Children:—

1. *Kezia Stanley*, b. Feb. 16, 1726/7.
 2. *John Stanley*, b. May 1, 1730.
 3. *William Stanley*, bapt. Sept. 17, 1733.
 4. *Hannah Stanley*, bapt. Sept. 23, 1733.
 5. *Richard Stanley*, bapt. May 27, 1737.
 6. *Sands Stanley*, bapt. Feb. 25, 1738/9.
- ix. **PIEBE**, bapt. Nov. 22, 1702; m. Benjamin Stanley Oct. 23, 1741, as his second wife; she d. April 2, 1751, aged about forty-five.

Child:—

1. *Phebe Stanley*, b. Dec. 28, 1743.
- x. **DAVIN**, bapt. July 21, 1706; m. Elizabeth Corning Jan. 18, 1726/7; removed to Tewksbury about 1743 and later to Groton, where he d. in 1758.

Children:—

1. *Phebe*, b. Aug. 19, 1727, in Beverly; m. Thomas Livingstone.
 2. *Lydia*, b. Dec. 10, 1729; m. James Danforth.
 3. *Nathaniel*, b. Dec. 1, 1731; m. Sybil Stone of Groton.
 4. *Daniel*, b. Dec. 2, 1733; d. Aug. 9, 1734.
 5. *Abigail*, b. June 1, 1735; d. unmarried in Groton in 1776.
 6. *Daniel*, b. Oct. 22, 1737; d. in Nov., 1743, in Beverly.
 7. *Lucy*, b. Jan. 26, 1739/40; m. Capt. Joseph Moors.
 8. *A child*; d. in Nov., 1743, in Beverly.
 9. *Daniel*, b. Aug. 12, 1744, in Tewksbury; m. Martha Lawrence; d. in Ashby.
 10. *Elizabeth*, b. Oct. 24, 1746; m. Isaac Dodge.
 11. *David*, b. July 22, 1749.
- xi. **ABIGAIL**, b. May 9, 1708; m. Daniel Butman May 18, 1732; he was buried Feb. 26, 1779, aged seventy.

Child:—

1. *Esther Butman*, b. Feb. 3, 1732/3.

9. **SAMUEL³ STONE** (*Nathaniel², John¹*) was baptized in Salem 27: 7: 1666. He married Abial Gaines daughter of John and Mary (Treadwell) Gaines of Ipswich May 27, 1690. He was a cordwainer and lived in Manchester.

He died October 14, 1739, in Manchester. His will, dated October 15, 1739, an obvious error existing either in the date of the document or in the town records, was probated November 19, 1739, and leaves his property to his wife Abial, no mention by name being made of his children.* Widow Abial Stone died December 4, 1754, in Manchester, aged eighty-four.

Children:—

- i. **SAMUEL**, b. April 1, 1691/2, in Beverly; m. Ruth Knight in Manchester May 16, 1717. He was a shipwright, living in Manchester, except for an interval between 1730 and 1740 when he and his

* Essex Probate, 324 : 14.

family were at Falmouth, on Casco Bay. Ruth (Knight) Stone d. July 19, 1776, at Manchester, aged seventy-five. Her husband survived until Jan. 3, 1779, aged eighty-seven or eighty-eight.

Children:—

1. *Elizabeth*, b. March 19, 1718/9, in Manchester.
 2. *Ruth*, b. Jan. 29, 1720/1, in Manchester.
 3. *Samuel*, bapt. Aug. 23, 1724, in Manchester; m. Esther Haskell of Gloucester Dec. 17, 1751.
 4. *Hannah*; m. Downing Lee in Manchester Dec. 24, 1747.
 5. (*Jea*)n, b. March 3, 1729/30, at Falmouth; m. Israel Foster in Manchester, Jan. 15, 1750/1.
 6. (*Em*)me, b. Nov. 17, 1731, at Falmouth; d. Nov. 1766, at Manchester, aged thirty-five.
 7. *William*, b. Jan. 29, 1735/6, at Falmouth; d. Dec. 8, 1804, at Manchester, aged sixty-seven or sixty-eight.
 8. *Mary*, b. Aug. 30, 1738, at Falmouth.
- ii. **JANE**, b. Feb. 9, 1695/6, in Beverly; m. Samuel Morgan Jan. 26, 1720/1.

Children, b. in Manchester:—

1. *Andrew Morgan*, bapt. May 17, 1724.
 2. *Samuel Morgan*, bapt. July 19, 1724.
 3. *Lucy Morgan*, b. Dec. 25, 1725.
 4. *Anna Morgan*, bapt. Dec. 3, 1727.
 5. *Samuel Morgan*, bapt. Feb. 8, 1729/30.
- iii. **ABIAL**, bapt. May 14, 1699, in Beverly; m. Joseph Hassam, son of William and Sarah Hassam, in Manchester Oct. 4, 1727.

Children:—

1. *Benjamin Hassam*, b. May 17, 1729; "drowned in way to Lisbon," 1749, aged twenty-one.
 2. *Susanna Hassam*, b. July 29, 1733; d. in infancy.
 3. *Susanna Hassam*, b. Oct. 27, 1734.
 4. *Elizabeth Hassam*, b. Nov. 18, 1741.
- iv. **ABIGAIL**, b. April 9, 1705, in Manchester; m. John Leach, son of Robert and Mary (Robinson) Leach, Nov. 13, 1729; she d. about 1732; he was lost at sea in March, 1767.

Children:—

1. *Abigail Leach*, b. Oct. 14, 1730.
 2. *Mary Leach*, b. Feb. 12, 1732.
- v. **ESTHER**, b. June 10, 1709; m. (1) Samuel Carter Nov. 16, 1732; she d. Feb. 23, 1749/50; he m. on April 16, 1752, (2) Sarah Sears, who d. Feb. 16, 1756; and (3) Martha Donnell of Topsfield, int. March 19, 1774; he d. April 9, 1788, aged eighty-two or eighty-three; his widow d. Dec. 24, 1789, aged sixty-six or sixty-seven.

Children:—

1. *Elizabeth Carter*, bapt. Sept. 30, 1733.
2. *Obed Carter*, b. March 24, 1736.
3. *Mary Carter*, b. June 26, 1737.
4. *Samuel Carter*, bapt. Sept. 23, 1739; d. in infancy.
5. *Esther Carter*, bapt. June 7, 1741.
6. *Samuel Carter*, bapt. March 11, 1743/4.
7. *John Carter*, bapt. Sept. 27, 1747.

- vi. BETHIA, b. June 28, 1712; m. Aaron Bennett June 27, 1734; he d. Oct. 20, 1780, aged seventy-five; she d. Jan. 24, 1789, aged seventy-five.

Children:—

1. *William Bennett*, b. July 2, 1735; lost at sea in the West Indies, 1760.
2. *Aaron Bennett*, b. March 20, 1736/7; lost at sea in the West Indies, 1760.
3. *Benjamin Bennett*, b. Aug. 1, 1739.
4. *Bethia Bennett*, b. Nov. 2, 1740; m. Samuel Foster April 14, 1763.
5. *Anna Bennett*, b. Sept. 9, 1744.
6. *Samuel Bennett*, b. Dec. 9, 1746.
7. *John Bennett*, b. Aug. 14, 1749; drowned, 1772.
8. *David Bennett*, b. Jan. 28, 1752; drowned May 4, 1776.

10. DANIEL³ STONE (*Nathaniel², John¹*) was baptized in Beverly May 18, 1679. He married Hannah Woodbury in Beverly January 14, 1702/3, and died January 20, 1712/3, aged thirty-four. Administration was granted to his widow on March 2, 1712/3, and she returned an inventory of £106. In her account, dated 1727, she is allowed £20 "for bringing up y^e child, it being sickly, & y^e Doct^r."* She m. Peter Groves January 7, 1718/9.

Child, born in Beverly:—

- i. REBECCA, b. March 23, 1709/10; m. Rev. William Balch March 12, 1727/8. He graduated from Harvard in 1724, and was minister at East Bradford for sixty-five years. She d. July 2, 1749, and he m. Abigail Blodgett as his second wife. He d. Jan. 12, 1791/2.

Children:—

1. *Rebecca Balch*, b. Aug. 9, 1729.
2. *William Balch*, b. July 15, 1730.
3. *Hannah Balch*, b. May 25, 1732.
4. *Sarah Balch*, b. Dec. 16, 1733.
5. *Daniel Balch*, b. March 14, 1734/5.
6. *Nathaniel Balch*, b. Jan. 17, 1737/8.
7. *Benjamin Balch*, b. April 4, 1743.

11. JONATHAN⁴ STONE (*Nehemiah³, John², John¹*) was baptized in Beverly September 2, 1702. He married Hannah Lovet, daughter of Simon and Annis (Swetland) Lovet of Beverly, October 31, 1726. The town of Arundel, Maine, having made a large grant of land to Edmund Goffe of Cambridge, on condition that he either settle in Arundel himself or provide a substitute, he engaged Jonathan Stone as his agent, and Stone, calling himself a coaster, of Beverly, purchased one hundred and twenty-three acres of land in Arundel from John Watson on

* Essex Probate, 310 : 513, 546; 316 : 78.

May 13, 1735.* In 1736, having established his family in Arundel, he sold "my now dwelling house in Beverly with half an acre of land" to Moses Morgan.†

Stone was made a proprietor of the town in 1737. He continued in the coasting trade, and in 1747 the Rev. Mr. Hovey mentions his schooner "Mary" in his diary. His female negro slave was one of the few held in Arundel and was valued highly.

Mr. Hovey writes in his diary "Mr. Stone died after a long confinement with jaundice, followed with a numb palsy and dropsy, which brought him to his end January 11," 1749/50. His gravestone on Huff's Neck, near the Newman house, gives his age as 47 years, 6 months. His widow fell from her horse while going to court at York to apply for administration of his estate, and under the date of March 26, Mr. Hovey says "Mrs. Stone returned from York where she hath been from February 27, and came home so lame as to be unable to walk . . . two men carried her in a chair to her fireside."

Hannah Stone, widow, and Israel Stone, joiner, of Arundel were appointed administrators, with Thomas Perkins, Esq., and Dixey Stone, mariner, as sureties on March 1, 1749/50. The estate was very large and the inventory lists among other items his Arundel homestead (£200), fifty acres and half of Scargo saw-mill (£66), three-eighths of a sloop (£29:17:4), a schooner (£40), three punch bowls, a sky glass, a watch (£8), shoe buckles, sleeve buttons, wig and cane. An additional inventory of his Beverly property, all real estate, valued at £155, was made by Robert Hale, Esq., Capt. Henry Herrick and Mr. John Stevens. In her account the widow claimed £31 for "her fall when in her Journey to York by which she was wounded and Lame long time." The estate was divided on August 26, 1756, between the widow, sons Israel, Jonathan, John, William, and Nehemiah, and only daughter Lydia.‡

Mrs. Stone married Capt. John Fairfield of Arundel as her second husband.

Children:—

- i. HANNAH, bapt. May 7, 1727, in Beverly; d. *s. p.* before 1756.
- ii. ISRAEL, b. Sept. 2, 1728, in Beverly; m. Sarah Perkins, daughter of Ensign Thomas and Mary (Wildes) Perkins of Arundel; mariner; d. in 1777, when his widow Sarah administered his estate;§ she d. Aug. 6, 1807, *ae.* 73 (Thomas Durrell Family Bible); her estate was administered by her son Israel in 1808, her heirs being her children Hannah Stone, Eunice Kimball, Sarah Kimball,

* York Deeds, XVII : 19.

† Essex Deeds, 73 : 138.

‡ York Probate, No. 18128.

§ York Probate, No. 18110.

Mary Perkins, Israel Stone and James Stone, and grandchildren Clement and Sarah Lord, of whom Thomas Durrell was guardian.*

Children:—

1. *Sarah*; m. Isaac Kimball Aug. 1, 1771.
 2. *Elizabeth*, b. 1756; m. Thomas Durrell Jan. 15, 1778; d. Sept. 8, 1778.
 3. *Mary*; m. Abner Perkins March 5, 1785.
 4. *Thomas*; d. at sea before 1808, *s. p.*
 5. *Jane*; m. Abraham Lord Nov. 2, 1786.
 6. *Hannah*; m. Capt. John Stone, son of Dixey and Mary (Curtis) Stone, her cousin, July 21, 1795; d. March 21, 1805.
 7. *Eunice*; m. James Kimball of Wells May 21, 1801.
 8. *James*; m. (1) Sarah Smith June 20, 1802; she d. Jan. 15, 1818, aged thirty-seven; m. (2) Lydia Perkins Dec. 14, 1818; she d. Feb. 10, 1838, aged fifty-four; Capt. James Stone d. May 16, 1838, aged sixty-five.
 9. *Israel*, b. Sept. 23, 1775; m. Phebe Stone, daughter of Benjamin and Anna (Perkins) Stone Jan. 30, 1817; he d. Mar. 15, 1857; she d. Nov. 18, 1868 (Family Bible).
- iii. JONATHAN, b. May 7, 1730, in Beverly; m. (1) Hannah Griffin (on the authority of Mr. Bradbury, author of the *History of Kennebunkport*, 1837) and possibly she is the "wife of Jonathan Stone" who d. in Beverly, with her still-born child, in 1759; m. (2) Phebe Downing; m. (3) Sarah (Miller) Washburne April 1, 1788; the heirs of Col. Jonathan Stone appointed Jacob Wildes, Esq., to settle his estate Jan. 22, 1799, and his widow Sarah and sons Dudley, Benjamin and Jonathan are mentioned.†

Children, by first wife:—‡

1. *John*; private in Capt. James Hubbard's company, Col. Ephraim Doolittle's regiment, Oct. 10, 1775; d. at Lake Champlain while in the service in 1776, *s. p.*
2. *Dudley*; served in Revolutionary Army for three months twenty-four days from May 12, 1776, in Capt. Jesse Dorman's company, Col. James Scamman's regiment; at Falmouth from Jan. 22, 1776, to Nov. 25, 1776, in Capt. Tobias Lord's company; in Rhode Island from May 19, 1777, to July 18, 1777, in Capt. Abel Moulton's company, Col. Titcombs' regiment; from Aug. 14, 1777, to Nov. 30, 1777, in Capt. Joshua Mason's company, Col. Storer's regiment; m. Hannah Perkins, Feb. 26, 1784.
3. *Hannah*, b. Feb. 14, 1757; m. Daniel Perkins Dec. 4, 1777.

By second wife:—

4. *Benjamin*, b. Nov. 26, 1759; served in Capt. John Elden's company, Col. Robinson's regiment from February to April, 1776; m. (1) Anna Perkins Oct. 22, 1787; she d. Nov. 16, 1820; m. (2) Sarah Patten July 22, 1822; d. Sept. 28, 1826; will of Benjamin Stone, gentleman,

* York Probate, No. 18155.

† York Deeds, 62 : 231.

‡ This distribution is on the authority of Mr. Bradbury.

made Sept. 15, 1826, proved March 6, 1827, mentions his wife Sarah, his elder children Abner, Phebe and Jonathan and his younger children Sally, Anna, Lois, Mary, Sophia and Benjamin;* the will of his daughter Sarah Stone lists her brothers and sisters as Abner and Jonathan Stone, Mary, Lois and Phebe Stone, Anna Clark and Sophia Twombly;† Sarah (Patten) Stone d. Dec. 12, 1853, aged 83; the family graves are in Lock's Cemetery.

5. *Lois*; m. Daniel Walker Dec. 23, 1779.
 6. *Lydia*; m. John Robinson Dec. 16, 1784.
 7. *Jonathan*; m. (1) Margaret McCullough; m. (2) Elizabeth Pickering of Newington, N. H., Oct. 29, 1798; mariner; d. Dec. 23, 1816; on his gravestone is inscribed "A skillful navigator. An honest and industrious citizen"; his wife Betsey, son Adam and daughter Olive survived him; his large estate included one-half of the brig "Juno," 317 gallons of rum, shares in the Kennebunkport and Cumberland Banks, much silver, mahogany, Oriental and East Indian articles, etc.; Cyrus K. Fairfield of Fort Wayne, Indiana, was appointed administrator *d. b. n.* in 1886 to collect French spoliation claims.
 8. *Elizabeth*; m. Eliphalet Perkins Oct. 5, 1786; she d. Jan. 26, 1848, aged 80.
 9. *Alice*, b. June 29, 1769; m. Stephen Perkins, son of Abner and Anna Perkins, April 22, 1790; she d. Jan. 14, 1850, aged 80.
 10. *Phebe*, bapt. June 2, 1771; m. Josiah Paine Feb. 12, 1793.
 11. *Samuel*, bapt. June 4, 1775; d. young.
- iv. **ELIZABETH**, b. Oct. 22, 1732, in Beverly; d. *s. p.* before 1756.
- v. **BENJAMIN**, bapt. July 13, 1735, in Beverly; d. at sea before 1756, *s. p.*
- vi. **JOHN**; m. Jane Lord, daughter of Tobias and Jane (Smith) Lord of Arundel; his will, dated July 10, 1800, and proved Oct. 25, 1800, mentions his wife Jane, sons Jonathan, Tobias and John, daughters Hannah Robinson and Betty Mason and grandchildren Jane and John Averill.‡

Children:—

1. *Jonathan*; m. Betsey Webster.
 2. *Tobias*; m. Jane Lord July 23, 1793.
 3. *Hannah*; m. Joshua Robinson Sept. 18, 1781.
 4. *Mary*; m. Joseph Averill Oct. 18, 1785.
 5. *Elizabeth*, bapt. Nov. 10, 1771; m. Benjamin Mason of Coxhall Aug. 4, 1795.
 6. *John*, bapt. Jan. 7, 1774; living in Gardiner in 1837.
 7. *Daniel*, bapt. Dec. 8, 1776; d. young.
- vii. **LYDIA**; m. William Sargent; living in York in 1764, when they sold land in Arundel inherited from her father;§ removed to Frenchman's Bay, Maine; children.
- viii. **WILLIAM**; m. Betsey Thompson; she removed to Bristol, Lincoln County, Maine.¶

* York Probate, No. 18075.

† York Probate, No. 18156.

‡ York Probate, No. 18120.

§ York Deeds, 38 : 59.

¶ York Deeds, 48 : 94.

Children:—

1. *Abigail.*
2. *Betsy.*
3. *Sarah.*

ix. NEHEMIAH; m. (1) Hannah Murpby Jan. 27, 1774; m. (2) Elizabeth Emmons Oct. 3, 1805; d. s. p.

12. CAPT. DIXEY^d STONE (*Nehemiah^s, John^s, John^d*) was born in Beverly Nov. 20, 1713. He accompanied his brother Jonathan to Arundel where he was a ship-captain, engaged in the coasting trade. On June 26, 1750, the Rev. Mr. Hovey, the local minister, entered in his diary "Dixey Stone and Perkins launched their sloop." This vessel may have been the "Speedwell" of which Capt. Stone was in command "in His Majesty's Service in the Expedition Eastward" in 1754, the service beginning June 3 and ending August 6. She was of ninety tons burden and Capt. Stone received £27: 17: 2 for her use and £6: 3: 9 for his services as master. He was accompanied by Elijah Littlefield as mate, and Joseph Bickford and Jeremy Spring, sailors.

Dixey Stone

Dixey Stone was buried September 27, 1791,* and John Hovey, Esq., Capt. Jacob Wildes and Mr. Thomas Perkins were appointed to administer his estate. An account was presented by his son Robert, however, two years later, stating that the personal estate not being sufficient to pay the debts, it was necessary to sell a portion of the real estate. In 1797, all of the remaining real estate was settled on Robert, the eldest son, on condition that he make certain payments to his brothers and sisters, Jacob, John, Jane wife of James Burnham, Abigail wife of John Smith, Paul (Polly), the heirs of his brother Dixey and the heirs of his sister Sarah Patten.†

Mr. Bradbury says of Dixey Stone "His first wife was a Lovet, who left no children. His second wife was Mary Curtis, whom he married May 15, 1750." In Kennebunkport there still stands a small slate gravestone on which is cut "Mrs. Jane Stone ——— 1748," which undoubtedly marked the grave of Capt. Stone's first wife. As to her being a Lovet, however, there is some doubt, there being no Jane Lovet recorded in that Beverly family of proper age to have married Dixey Stone. His second

* "Capt. Stone was buried" [Diary of Elizabeth (Perkins) Wildes].

† York Probate, No. 18088.

wife, Mary Curtis, was a daughter of Jacob and Abigail (Bracy) Curtis of Arundel.

Mr. Bradbury's statement that all of Capt. Stone's children were by his second wife is also subject to strong doubt. His daughter Jane had a daughter married in 1784, and it is therefore probable that she herself was born before 1750, the year of his marriage to Mary Curtis. The same reasoning applies to his son Dixey, who had a son born in 1767. Robert, the eldest son in 1797, and Abigail, whose eldest child was born in 1772, can be assigned with even less certainty. The survival of a Bible record is the only chance of a definite determination of the question, in view of the fragmentary character of the Arundel records.

Children:— (The exact order of their birth unknown).

- i. JANE; m. (1) John Wildes, son of Jacob and Ruth (Foster) Wildes of Arundel; m. (2) James Burnham, son of James and Grace (Delzell) Burnham, as his second wife, on Dec. 26, 1776; Burnham was killed in a skirmish with British sailors on Goat Island on Aug. 8, 1782; as Jane Burnham, widow, of Charlestown, Middlesex County, she deeded land to her son Dixey Wildes in 1807.*

Children, by first husband:—

1. *John Wildes*; d. in infancy.
2. *Lydia Wildes*; m. Alexander Thompson April 8, 1784.
3. *Thomas Wildes*.
4. *Dixey Wildes*; m. Theodosia Bragdon of York, int. July 28, 1804.

By second husband:—

5. *Seth Burnham*, b. Sept. 23, 1777.
- ii. DIXEY, m. Elizabeth Fairfield, daughter of John Fairfield of Arundel; d. before 1796, when his brother John was appointed guardian of his children Betty and John.†

Children:—

1. *Benjamin*, b. Feb. 26, 1766/7; m. Betty Perkins Aug. 16, 1792; Capt. Benjamin Stone was lost at sea in 1796, aged twenty-nine; his widow m. John Strothers of Wells, int. Aug. 24, 1799; Strothers, as guardian of Dixey Stone, son of Benjamin, accounted for his schooling, clothing and board in 1809;‡ Dixey Stone, the son, was b. Sept. 11, 1794, and d. March 26, 1870, in Bridgton.
2. *Susanna*, b. April 24, 1771; m. Samuel Smith, Jr., July 21, 1791.
3. *Sarah*, b. June 16, 1775.
4. *Elizabeth*, b. Oct. 29, 1779.
5. *John*, b. May 12, 1782.

* York Deeds, 77 : 73.

† York Probate, No. 18119.

‡ York Probate, No. 18089.

- iii. ROBERT; m. Mary Miller, daughter of Joseph Miller of Arundel; mariner; his will, dated Dec. 18, 1810, and proved April 13, 1811, mentions his daughters Molly Robinson, Lydia Benson, Sally Smith, Jane Stone and Peggy Stone, and his sons Robert and Dixey, the latter being named executor.*

Children:—

1. *Joseph*, bapt. Nov. 1, 1772; d. before 1810, *s. p.*
 2. *Jane*, bapt. Nov. 1, 1772; unmarried in 1810.
 3. *Margaret*, bapt. Aug. 22, 1773; unmarried in 1810.
 4. *Mary*, bapt. May 5, 1776; m. Samuel Robinson, Jr., April 12, 1798.
 5. *Sarah*, bapt. Jan. 4, 1778; d. young.
 6. *Sarah*, bapt. Sept. 17, 1780; m. Andrew Smith March 3, 1808.
 7. *Lydia*, bapt. Aug. 22, 1784; m. Robert Benson Nov. 27, 1804.
 8. *Dixey*, bapt. Sept. 27, 1791; m. Hannah Smith Feb. 3, 1813.
 9. *Robert*; m. Caroline Perkins Nov. 1, 1810; d. 1818.†
- iv. ABIGAIL; m. John Smith, son of Robert and Mary (Miller) Smith of Arundel; he was b. June 10, 1743.

Children:—

1. *Thomas Smith*, b. Sept. 13, 1772.
 2. *Jane Smith*, b. Dec. 30, 1773.
 3. *Robert Smith*, b. Aug. 24, 1776.
 4. *John Smith*, b. Jan. 4, 1778.
 5. *Robert Smith*, b. March 9, 1782.
 6. *Andrew Smith*, b. April 29, 1784.
 7. *William Smith*, b. Nov. 16, 1788.
- v. ANDREW; m. Rebecca Smith, daughter of Charles and Rebecca (Haley) Smith of Kittery and Arundel; private in Capt. Jesse Dorman's company, 30th Regiment, enlisting May 8, 1775, for three months; drummer in Capt. Wilde's company, Col. Phinney's Regiment at Fort George Jan. 1, 1776, to Dec. 8, 1776; at Fishkill June 16, 1778, enlisting for nine months; mariner; deeded ten acres in Arundel to his brother Robert Jan. 31, 1784;‡ died at sea before 1794, when his widow m. John Huff on Sept. 4; no children.
- vi. SARAH; m. James Patten, son of Robert and Florence (Johnson) Patten of Arundel Dec. 7, 1775.§
- vii. JACOB; mariner; living in 1800, when he deeded thirteen acres in Arundel to his brother Robert;¶ d. at Frenchman's Bay.
- viii. CAPT. JOHN; m. Hannah Stone, daughter of Israel and Hannah (Perkins) Stone, his first cousin once removed, July 21, 1795; d. in Dartmoor Prison, England, during the War of 1812; his widow d. Feb. 4, 1847, aged seventy-three.

Child:—

1. *Eliza*; d. Feb. 28, 1861, aged fifty-eight.
- ix. POLLY; unmarried in 1797; "married in Standish," according to Mr. Bradbury.

* York Probate, No. 18151.

† York Probate, No. 18152.

‡ York Deeds, 49 : 52.

§ Her ancestry is the subject of this pamphlet.

¶ York Deeds, 66 : 220.

UNDERWOOD

WILLIAM UNDERWOOD, probably born in England about 1615, is first found in Massachusetts in 1639/40 in Concord when his eldest child was born. His marriage to his wife Sarah is not recorded, but it is supposed that it took place in New England and that he crossed the Atlantic several years before 1639. He and his growing family remained in Concord, where he took the Freeman's Oath on May 22, 1650, until 1654 when they moved inland to the new settlement of Chelmsford, where Underwood was present at the first town meeting on November 22, 1654, and where William Underwood and "Brother Underwood's wife" joined the church on November 13, 1655. He signed petitions to the General Court to grant to Chelmsford land which would give it a three-mile frontage on the Merrimac river in 1656, and to be allowed to trade with the Indians in 1658. His farm lay on the Stony Brook path, near the foot of Francis hill.

At the outbreak of King Philip's war in 1675 Underwood, John Burge and Thomas Chamberlain were a committee to urge the Colony's magistrates to consider the danger the town was exposed to because of the Wamesit Indians, and because of the war he later claimed that he had sustained a loss of £3:16:0. In 1678 he was a member of the committee entrusted with the delicate duty of seating the people in the meetinghouse, and in 1679 he and John Fiske laid out thirty acres of town land for the use of the ministry. He served Chelmsford as selectman in 1654, 1667, 1669-1682, a long tour of duty which speaks well of his reputation. When the threat of renewed Indian hostilities became immediate in Chelmsford in 1691 William Underwood and his family took refuge at the garrison of Andrew Spaulding.

His first wife Sarah having died in Chelmsford on November 5, 1684, Underwood married, secondly, on March 17, 1684/5, Anne Kidder, widow of Ensign James Kidder of Billerica. He died August 12, 1697.

The will of William Underwood of Chelmsford was made March 14, 1693/4, and proved August 30, 1697. He left to his son Samuel the lands and meadows at Great and Little Tadmuck which he had formerly given him, to be his full portion of the estate, but added his best greatcoat, a great chest and the corn owed him by Joshua Fletcher. "What I promised to Ann, my beloved wife, upon marriage with her, Shall Stand," and she shall make her choice of and improve those lands and meadows that lie next his barn, if she please, for her proportion. Also to his wife

“for her tender care of me in my weak and afflicted condition,” a feather bed, a bolster, an iron kettle and a pair of old oxen, his grandsons Nathaniel and William Blodgett to have the improvement of the oxen until it may be judged by discreet persons that it will be convenient to turn them to fattening. To wife Ann, all his barrels. (Was he a cooper by trade?) To his daughter Remembrance Richardson, the feather bed he had in his house before he last married. To his grandsons Nathaniel and William Blodgett, an acre of land each. To grandson Edward Spalden, all the land adjoining his father’s land. To his grandson Samuel Richardson, cattle and corn equal to the value of the land given to Edward Spalden. To his three grandsons, Nathan Blodgett, William Blodgett and Joseph Butterfield, all the remaining lands and meadows, Joseph to live with him and his wife until he reaches twenty-one, but, after his death, his wife may free Joseph from the obligation. Executors: his wife, Nathaniel and William Blodgett. Residue of his estate to Nathaniel and William Blodgett and Joseph Butterfield. Witnesses: John Bates, Joseph Peram, Moses Keyes. The principal item in the inventory, which was taken August 24, 1697, by Thomas Parker, John Peram and Solloman Keyes, senior, was “housing, lands, orchards, fences, meadows,” valued at £126. There was little else of interest mentioned and the total value was only £190:08:0.*

Children born in Concord, baptized in Chelmsford:

- i. REMEMBRANCE, b. Feb. 27, 1639(40); bapt. Feb. 1, 1656(7), at “about 15 years”; m. at Chelmsford June 6, 1659, Josiah Richardson. (*See Richardson.*)
- ii. SARAH, b. Sept. 25, 1641; bapt. Feb. 1, 1656(7), aged “about 14 years”; m. at Chelmsford March 10, 1669(70), Daniel Blodgett who d. Jan. 28, 1671(2). She requested the court that her father administer the estate; probably not living when her father made his will in 1693/4.
- iii. PRISCILLA, b. Feb. 16, 1645(6); bapt. Feb. 1, 1656(7), aged “about 10 years”; m. at Chelmsford July 6, 1663, Edward Spalding who m. secondly Nov. 22, 1681, Margaret Barrett; he d. Jan. 10, 1707/8. Representative to the General Court in 1691.
- iv. AQUILA, b. July 3, 1647, bapt. Feb. 1, 1656(7), aged “about 8 years”; drowned June 17, 1657.
- v. RENECCA, b. Dec. 25, 16—; d. April 6, 1650.
- vi. DEBORAH, bapt. Feb. 1, 1656(7), aged “about 4 years”; m. in Chelmsford Dec. 31, 1668, Nathaniel Butterfield; d. June 25, 1691; he was living in December, 1719, aged 76, according to the probate papers of his son Benjamin. 8 children.
- vii. SAMUEL, b. in Chelmsford Feb. 14, 1655(6); bapt. Feb. 1, 1656(7), aged “about 1 year.” He did not duplicate his father’s activities at Chelmsford, his only office being that of fence-viewer in the

* Middlesex Probate, No. 23192.

Stony Brook valley section of the town. In the right of his father he received grants of town lands in 1711, 1717 and 1720. He and his wife Sarah, her surname not known, are said to have moved in their old age to Litchfield, New Hampshire, where he died March 5, 1734/5, in his 85th year, an exaggeration of five years. The name of only one child has been recovered with certainty.

Child:

1. *Aquila*, b. about 1692. He lived in Westford, a town set off from Chelmsford in 1729, until 1734 when he moved to Litchfield and on July 29 was authorized to call the first town meeting when he was elected moderator, town clerk and first selectman. He owned a farm of 228 acres in 1737. He was dismissed from the Westford church to that of Litchfield in 1741. By 1761 he had moved to Sandisfield, Berkshire County, Massachusetts, where he was received into the church July 26, and where he died May 29, 1767, aged 75. His wife Margaret died there Aug. 26, 1780, aged 81. Children Samuel, *Aquila*, Mary, Hannah, William, Parker and Lucy recorded in Westford 1722/3-1791. The son *Aquila*, born Dec. 6, 1723, died Jan. 3, 1723/4, according to the Westford record, but Feb. 14, 1723/4, according to the Chelmsford record.

WARDWELL

WILLIAM WARDWELL must have come to New England in his boyhood as an apprentice of Mr. Edmund Quincy as he was admitted to the church in Boston, described as Mr. Quincy's servant, on February 9, 1633/4. On February 20, 1636, Boston granted him two acres at Mount Wollaston "only for his present planting" and on February 19, 1637, a "great lot" at the same place. By 1636 he had married Alice ———. Thomas Wardwell, who was admitted to the Boston church November 9, 1634, is reasonably supposed to have been William's brother. Both of the Wardwells were followers of Mrs. Hutchinson in the famous Antinomian controversy which rent the church asunder. They were disarmed in 1637 and went to Exeter with Rev. John Wheelwright, being dismissed to the Exeter church on January 6, 1638/9. They were signers of the Exeter combination, an agreement for self government, on June 5, 1639, and both had grants of land. When the long arm of Massachusetts overtook them at Exeter, William Wardwell and his wife and family again joined their minister Wheelwright in his search for a new home and settled with him at Wells.

In Wells Wardwell kept a tavern, undoubtedly combining this business with farming. His licenses to sell at retail survive in the records of the courts of October, 1649, and March, 1656/7. In 1653 Massachusetts, taking over the Gorges Province of Maine, caught up with the Wheelwright fugitives, and on July 4 commissioners arrived in Wells to take the submission of the inhabitants. "And whilst the names of the Inhabitants of Wells were Calling Wm Wardwell . . . was Called to come in & Ansr to his name which he Refused & Contemptuously turned his backe on the Court." They issued a warrant to the Constable and adjourned the court to Mr. Ezekiel Knight's where the constable brought Wardwell, the rest of the inhabitants accompanying him. He was dismissed upon his hardly credible excuse that "his Intent was not to Contem the Court but Rather to endeavor to gett the Rest of the Inhabitants of Wells that had not Appeared to Come in & make theire Appearances." The inhabitants all submitted the next day, July 5, 1653, and they were given the freeman's oath. The court found that Mr.

Pormont and Wardwell had been dismissed from their church relation at their own request and they were advised to desist from further disturbance of the place by asserting their pretended church relation.* Wardwell was in court October 25, 1653, for casting aspersions on the magistrates of Massachusetts Bay. Stating that "it was not an ordinance of God," Wardwell refused to subscribe towards the college (Harvard) in 1654.

Having "submitted" in a far from courageous manner, Wardwell returned to Boston, where on December 5, 1657, he married Elizabeth (Crow) (Perry) Gillett, widow of Arthur Perry and of John Gillett. On the day before their wedding they entered into a contract that such estate as she was in possession of before marriage should be at her disposing, the witnesses being Seth Perry and John Perry. Wardwell engaged to bring up Hannah Gillett, daughter of John Gillett and Elizabeth, then about two years old, and to give her £16 on the day of her marriage or the day of his death, in exchange for the Gillett house, then "much decayed & ready to fall," to which Hannah would have in due course succeeded. On November 3, 1663, the court "allowed this covenant," but granted £21 to Hannah and the land to Wardwell and his heirs.† The house stood on the corner of Hanover and Cross streets.

Boston granted Wardwell permission "to draw beere" on April 29, 1661, and after his death widow Wardwell was licensed on April 25, 1670. Her license was renewed year after year, the privilege of selling "strong liquor" out of doors being added in 1691 when her daughter Deborah Mann shared the business with her. Wardwell died between April 18 and April 25, 1670. "Mis Wardel an antiant wido" died in Boston on February 12, 1697.

The will of William Wardell of Boston left to his wife Elizabeth one half of his dwelling-house for life, and all the movables therein except a bed and other furniture to the value of £20 which he bequeathed to his daughter Rachel Wardell. Also from the furnishings his wife's daughter Hannah Gillett was to have articles to the value of £20. Also out of the household stuff, £20 to his wife's daughter Deborah. To his son Uzal Wardell, the other half of the dwelling house, and after the death of the widow Elizabeth Wardell, Uzal was to have the whole house, he

* Maine Historical Society, Documentary Series, IV: 74, 75, 78.

† *New England Historical and Genealogical Register*, 13: 275.

paying to his brother Elihu Wardell £40 in silver or its equivalent. To his daughters Leah, wife of William Tower, Meribah, wife of Francis Littlefield, and Mary, wife of Nathaniel Rust, 10s. in silver apiece, to be paid by Uzal Wardell. Residue to son Uzal. Overseers: friends James Everill, William Bartholomew. The will was not dated, but witnesses Ambros Dawes, Joseph Wheeler, William Bartholomew and James Everill testified that he signed it April 18, 1670. It was entered June 4, 1670. The inventory dated April 30, 1670, lists property worth £382, less debts of £164, including funeral charges of £4. The furniture in the hall, hall chamber, parlor, parlor chamber, kitchen and cellar was worth £66. He had on hand 330 bushels of malt, 4 lbs. of hops and 5 full hogsheads of beer.*

Children, recorded in Boston:

- i. **MERIBAH**, b. May 14, 1637; m. Francis Littlefield. (*See Littlefield.*)
- ii. **UZAL**, b. April 7, 1639; m. (1) in Ipswich May 3, 1664, widow Mary (Kinsman) Ringe; m. (2) Grace——, who d. in Bristol, R. I., May 9, 1741, "Old Mrs. Grace Wardell"; he d. in Bristol Oct. 25, 1732, aged 93. Like his father before him, Uzal Wardwell, a carpenter, was of an unsettled disposition. After his first marriage he lived in Ipswich until about 1675 when he moved to Salem where he was the town's constable in 1681, and where he was taxed in 1683. By the summer of 1684 he had moved his family to Bristol, R. I., where he remained for the rest of his life. In Ipswich he was on the trial jury in the courts of September, 1677, and November, 1680. He took the Oath of Allegiance in 1678. He was the constable of Bristol in 1691.

In King Philip's war he saw much service, being a trooper in Capt. Paige's company in the Mt. Hope campaign and a sergeant in Major Appleton's company in the winter expedition to the Narragansett country.

The will of Uzal Wardell of Bristol, proved in 1732, mentions his wife Grace, his daughters Mary Barker, Sarah Bosworth, Abigail Green, Hannah Crompton, Grace Giddings, Alice Glading and sons Uzal, James, Joseph, William and Benjamin.

Children, by first wife:

1. *Abigail*, b. in Ipswich Oct. 27, 1665; m. in 1684 Lieut. John Greene.
2. *Hannah*, b. in Ipswich in 1667; m. Francis Crompton.
3. *Alice*, b. in Ipswich Dec. 27, 1670; m. at Bristol Oct. 31, 1693, John Glading.
4. *Uzal*.
5. *Sarah*; m. (1)? William Hoar; m. (2) Nathaniel Bosworth of Bristol.
6. *Mary*, b. in Ipswich Sept. 1677; m. Aug. 13, 1700, Jonathan Barker of Branford, Conn.

* Suffolk Probate, VII: 85, 91.

By second wife:

7. *Grace*; m. in Bristol Dec. 25, 1701, Joseph Giddings.
 8. *James*, b. in Bristol June 30, 1684.
 9. *Joseph*, b. in Bristol July 30, 1686; m., int. Oct. 15, 1709, Martha Giddings.
 10. *Benjamin*, b. in Bristol April 9, 1688.
 11. *William* (twin), b. in Bristol May 13, 1693.
 12. *Rebecca* (twin), b. in Bristol May 13, 1693; d. before her father.
- iii. ELIHU, bapt. Dec. 5, 1641, possibly an erroneous date.
- iv. ELIHU, b. Nov. 1642, possibly the same child as Elihu above; m. in Ipswich May 26, 1665, Elizabeth Wade. With Ezekiel Woodward he supplied shingles for the Ipswich meeting-house in 1668 at 19s. a thousand, and laid them at 7s. 6d. a thousand. He had liberty to fell trees to fence his homestead in 1668. With about a dozen other men he was in court on May 1, 1672, for shooting pistols and creating other disturbance in the house of Quartermaster Perkins in the evening after training day. In 1674 he built a fulling-mill for Edward Lumacks. He served in King Philip's war under Capt. Nicholas Manning. He took the Oath of Allegiance in Ipswich in 1678. Mr. Wardwell was allotted the second pew on the east side of the pulpit in Ipswich meeting-house for his wife and family and had liberty to sit in the sixth of the men's long seats in 1699, in which year he subscribed 10s. toward the church bell. In 1699 his father-in-law, Col. Jonathan Wade, left him £200 to be laid out in a house and land for the benefit of his wife Elizabeth. He bought Wade land from his brothers-in-law and built a house, deeding a small lot to his grandson, Samuel Dutch, in 1716.*

Elihu Wardwell made his will March 31, 1708, while ill, but he recovered and the document was not proved until January 5, 1716. He left his entire estate to his wife for her life. After her death the real estate was to be divided between his sons Elihu and Jonathan. His wife was to dispose of his personal estate to the children according to her discretion. If either Elihu or Jonathan should die before their mother, his share of the housing and lands was to go to a third son, Nathan, and, if Nathan should die before his mother, "to ye next male heirs in the name of Wardwell yt is nearest of kin." Executrix: wife Elizabeth. "I would be understood yt att this Time I have all my Children in remembrance. . . . The Circumstances of my Estate & ffamily not enabling of mee to make a Distribution among them att this Time." Witnesses: John Pottar, Joseph ffowler, Willm ffelloses. Mrs. Elizabeth Wardwell renounced the trust, and administration, *cum testamento annexo* was granted to Elihu and Jonathan Wardwell Dec. 26, 1717.†

Of the nine children listed below, there are birth or death records of six in Ipswich. Nathaniel is the Nathan of the will, and Mary and Margaret are "probable."

1. *Elizabeth*, b. Dec. 15, 1666; m. in Ipswich Sept. 11, 1691, Jacob Rowell.
2. *Elihu*, b. Jan. 2, 1668.
3. *Prudence*, b. Oct. 6, 1670; m., int. Dec. 19, 1702, Samuel Dutch.

* Essex Deeds, 80: 150.

† Essex Probate, No. 28936.

4. *Jonathan*, b. July 26, 1672; m. (1) in Charlestown Dec. 12, 1695, Katherine Chickering; m. (2) Oct. 18, 1710, Frances Morss.
 5. *Nathaniel*; m. in Ipswich May 19, 1702, Hannah Edwardes.
 6. *Mary*; m. in Ipswich Dec. 2, 1701, Abraham Rowell of Amesbury.
 7. *Margaret*; m. in Boston May 13, 1708, Jeremiah Storer.
 8. *Susanna*, b. Aug. 19, 1684; m. in Boston Dec. 2, 1712, Benjamin Storer.
 9. *John*; d. in Ipswich in 1688.
- v. **MARY**, bapt. April 14, 1644, about nine days old; m. Nathaniel Rust of Ipswich.
- vi. **LEAH**, b. Dec. 7 (bapt. Dec. "6"), 1646; m. William Tower of Boston.
- vii. **RACHEL**; unmarried in 1670.
 By second wife:
- viii. **ABIGAIL**, b. April 24, 1660; d. Aug. 23, 1661.

WATTS

1. SIMON WATT, yeoman, of Cockfield, North Darlington Ward, co. Durham, was buried at Cockfield October 19, 1584. He had a daughter married in 1579, from which we may approximate the date of his birth as 1539. He and his son Ralph witnessed the will of Richard Bayles, parson of Cockfield, December 16, 1574.

Cockfield lies about seven miles south-west of Bishop Auckland and about three miles north of Raby Castle, the medieval stronghold of the Nevilles which was purchased from the Crown by Sir Henry Vane in 1626. There are coal-mines at Cockfield which were worked from early times. The parish register begins in 1578.*

* In the parish registers of Cockfield there are a few Watt entries which cannot be assigned to the family headed by Simon Watt, although they doubtless refer to his near relations:

1578 2 Jan. Christopher Wat buried.
 1579 2 Aug. Rafe Bockerby and Jane Watt married.
 1600 5 Feb. Francis Lodge and Isabel Wat married.

Also the following family, which flourished in Cockfield after the descendants of Simon Watt became extinct, can be tabulated:

1. JAMES¹ WATT, "the father of Chr. Wat," was buried Dec. 26, 1618. Margaret, wife of James Watt, was buried Feb. 4, 1617. He was very possibly a son of the Christopher Wat who was buried in 1578.

2. CHRISTOPHER² (James¹) WATT, was buried Dec. 25, 1621. On Oct. 27, 1615, he had been presented at the Court Baron at Evenwood for keeping his cattle on the lord's waste.

Children: . . .

i. JAMES, bapt. at St. Helen Auckland Dec. 26, 1602. Took the Protestation Oath the 28th day of feb. last past. (Durham Protestation Roll, 1641/2.) Church warden, 1632.

Children: —

1. Christopher, bapt. Sept. 16, 1628; buried April 5, 1668.
 2. George, bapt. Jan. 8, 1642.
 3. Jane, bapt. July 29, 1634.

ii. THOMAS, bapt. May 20, 1605; after the death of a first wife, he m. June 3, 1638, Anne Jollie. Church warden, 1641/2.

Child: —

1. Ellner, bapt. June 30, 1629.

iii. WILLIAM, bapt. Nov. 2, 1608; buried Feb. 23, 1635.

iv. JANE, bapt. Oct. 20, 1612.

v. GEORGE, bapt. June 26, 1614.

vi. HENRY, bapt. May 14, 1620.

Children: —

1. Isaac, bapt. Nov. 23, 1659.
 2. George, bapt. June, 1660.
 3. Thomas, bapt. May 8, 1664.

In St. Andrew Auckland, a parish six miles to the east of Cockfield, the register contains the following Watt entries:

The will of Simon Watt of Cockfield, co. Durham, made October 14, 1583, directs that he be buried in the parish churchyard. To my wife and children the tenement that I dwell upon jointly, and my wife to be head of it so long she liveth, and if she do not marry. After her death or marriage, my son Ralph shall have the charge, he to be a good helper to his younger brethren. To my son Richard Watt a piece of ground which I took of John Emerson, lying in Softley lordship and occupied by the indenture made between me and the said John Emerson. To my son William Watt all my title I have to the ground called Sodesclose. To Richard Watt my best filly and mare. To my daughter Elizabeth Potter six ewes, which shall stand for her child's portion, for that I have paid to her husband all those things which I promised him with her in marriage. To every of my daughter's children, one lamb. The rest of all my goods to my wife and my three children Ralph Watt, Richard Watt and William Watt, whom I appoint executors. Witnesses: Ralph Watt, George Lodge, Robert Dixon.*

Children:—

- i. ELIZABETH; m. Edward Potter in Cockfield July 25, 1579; living, with children, in 1583.
2. ii. RALPH.
- iii. RICHARD; buried at Cockfield Oct. 15, 1589.
- iv. WILLIAM; buried at Cockfield Dec. 30, 1615. He left a will (missing) which was apparently contested and "letters of monition" were issued against Jane Watt, widow, and all the next of kin. Mr.

Baptisms

1576	Feb. 4	Raph s. of Nicholas Watt
1579	Oct. 11	Margrat. d. of Nicholas Watt
1584	Apr. 5	Elizabeth, d. of Anthony Watt
1595	Sept. 21	Margrat, d. of Peter Watt
1597	Oct. 2	Elizabeth, d. of Peter Watt
1601	Dec. 20	Margrat d. of Thomas Watt of Auckland
1602	Sept. 12	William s. of Cuthbert Watt of Auckland
1602	Dec. 26	James, s. of Christopher Watt of Condon

Marriages

1588	Anthony Watt and Isabel Hall.
1584	Christopher Gittery and Elizabeth Watt.

Burials

1582	May 21	A child of Nicholas Wat, christend and buried
1584	July 22	Elizabeth Watt, a child
1586	Feb. 11	Nicholas Watt, of Auckland
1596	Sept. 23	A child of Peter Watt
1600	Mar. 30	A child of Cuthbt. Watt called Rich.
1601	Apr. 3	John, a child of Cuthbt. Watt
1601	Nov. 1	A child of Cuthbert Watt called Annas
1604	Dec. 4	Widow Watt
1609	Feb. 16	Ralph Watt, plague
1609	Feb. 26	The wife of Cuthbt. Watt of plague
1609	Mar.	William Watt of plague
1609	Mar. 10	Cuthbt. Watt, pla.
1609	Mar. 13	two children of Cuthbt. Wats, pla.
1609	Mar. 19	Peter Wats wyfe, pla.
1609	Mar. 22	Peter Watt, pla.

* Registry of Durham.

Hogg appeared for the executor, William Sigworth, and Mr. Thomas King for the said Jane Watt.

Jane Watt of Cockfield, widow, late wife of William Watt, deceased, made her will May 2, 1625 (proved 1635). To brother Francis Alle, 15 s. To sister Elizabeth Wilkin, wife of Thomas Wilkin of Wakerfield, 15 s. To sister Anne Alle's daughter, a hog. To servant Elizabeth Lumley. To George Arrowsmith's three girls and his son, a lamb apiece. To Matthias Lyndley, son of Thomas Lyndley, a lamb. To George Newby 5 s., and to each of his three children a lamb. To Alle Newby, daughter of Lawrence Newby, a ewe. To Barbary Marley, daughter of Richard Marley, a ewe. Residue to cousin William Sigwick of Cockfield, executor. Witnesses: Thomas Lyndley, parson, John Lodge.*

2. RALPH² WATT (*Simon*¹) was born, presumably in Cockfield, about the year 1560. His wife Jane, who was buried May 22, 1605, was possibly the mother of all his children, although the wording of his will may indicate that George, his eldest son, was by an earlier marriage. Part of his land was in the Barony of Evenwood, of which the Bishop of Durham was lord, and he served as juror in the Barony Court in 1615 and was presented for not repairing his hedges in 1613 and 1616. He was buried at Cockfield May 9, 1616.

The will of Ralph Watt of Cockfield, co. Durham, was made March 19, 1614, and proved January 22, 1616. He directs that he be buried in the churchyard of Cockfield and laid by his loving wife, Jane Watt, deceased. To my son George Watt my house and copyhold lands at Tofthill as his full child's portion and he to be contented. To my son Moses Watt the inheritance of my house and lands at Cockfield, after the expiration of the lease of twenty-one years, for the use of himself the said Moses Watt and Henry Watt, Ann Watt, Susanna Watt and Barbary Watt. I entreat the said Moses to put in full power my lawful attorney Mr. George Dixon of Ramshaw to give livery and seisin of all my lands and houses in Cockfield to my son Moses, to descend after his death to my son Henry Watt and his heirs male, and, failing issue male, to my son George Watt and his issue male. All the rest of my goods and chattels I give to my son Henry Watt, Ann Watt, Susan Watt and Barbary Watt, whom I make executors. I entreat Mr. George Dixon of Ramshaw and my son George Watt to take the tuition of my children. Witnesses: Robert Dixon, George Dixon, Thomas Dixon, Bernard Bowes. Inventory: £330: 16: 2. Administration was granted to Ann Watt and Susan Watt of Cockfield, for the benefit of themselves and of Henry Watt and Barbara Watt, in 1616. Their sureties were

* Registry of Durham.

George Dixon of Ramshaw and George Watt of Lambeth, co. Surrey.*

Children, the first probably by a first wife:—

- i. GEORGE, of Lambeth, co. Surrey, in 1616, when he surrendered his father's lands, held of the Barony of Evenwood, to the Bishop. A moiety of one of the tenements was said to have been "of William Watt," who was either George's uncle or a more remote ancestor. He then took up the lands in his own name but apparently sold them at once as he surrendered them to Anthony Watson at the court at Evenwood in 1617. In 1632 Ralph Singleton was holding the moiety of the tenement "formerly of William Watt."
- ii. MOSES. Maria, reputed daughter of Moses Watt, was bapt. at St. Helen Auckland Feb. 4, 1620(1). He apparently d. *s.p.l.*
- iii. ANNE; was Mrs. Dixon when she came to New England in 1665.† (*See Dixon.*)
- iv. SUSANNA, bapt. Sept. 2, 1596; buried July 10, 1597.
- v. SUSANNA, bapt. Aug. 23, 1598; living in 1616.
3. vi. HENRY, bapt. June 28, 1602.
- vii. BARBARA, bapt. Nov. 20, 1603; m. — Bowes. Cockfield is only about seven miles by road from Streatlam Castle, the seat of the great Durham family of Bowes, now represented by the Earl of Strathmore, which had many junior branches in the lesser gentry and yeomanry, to one of which Barbara Watt's husband doubtless belonged.

In 1681, Barbara Bowes, widow, sued Mary Lodge, widow, and Robert Lodge, infant, to recover her father's land in Cockfield which she stated had been mortgaged by her brother, Henry Watt, to Henry Helmraw forty years previously. She alleged that Helmraw had sold the mortgage to Robert Lodge, grandfather of the infant defendant, and that, Henry Watt having died childless in New England,‡ she, as his sister of the whole blood and heiress, was entitled to the equity of redemption. The defendant claimed that Robert Lodge, the grandfather, was an absolute purchaser, that he conveyed the land by indenture and devise to his son Robert Lodge, deceased, from whom it descended to the infant defendant, Robert Lodge, without notice of the mortgage; also that the complainant, after "setting forth Ralph Watt to devise the premises to his youngest sons Moses and Henry by his will dated 1614, who are set forth to be dead without issue so that their estates in tail appear to be spent," had not set forth any title in herself. The judgment of the chancellor was that as it appeared above fifty years since the original mortgage and thirty-eight years since the conveyance to the defendant's ancestor, and the land had been peaceably enjoyed under his purchase, and as the complainant had not shown who was the eldest son of the common ancestor, nor whether he was dead or had left issue, it was not fit to relieve her.§

* Registry of Durham.

† Anne Watt is of peculiar interest to me as she is my direct maternal ancestress, the most certain blood which, considering human frailty, it is possible to trace. The descent from mother to daughter is as follows: Anne (Watt) Dixon, Anne (Dixon) Allanson, Anne (Allanson) Brown, Katherine (Brown) Lassell, Elizabeth (Lassell) Miller, Sarah (Miller) Towne, Lucy (Towne) Patten, Jane Merrill (Patten) Wildes and Mary Howard (Wildes) Davis, my mother.

‡ A false report must have reached Mrs. Bowes. Henry Watt was still alive in 1687.

§ Chancery Proceedings, D. 5/42; D2. 76/12.

Child (doubtless others) :—

1. *Thomas Bowes*. In 1697 Mr. Thomas Bowes came to Maine and claimed administration of the estate of Henry Watts, deceased, and it was granted to him. As a nephew he, of course, took precedence in the probate court over the Allison great-nieces, who were Mr. Watts' only surviving relations in America. As there is no other record of him in Maine, he probably returned to England as soon as his business was finished, possibly accompanied by a wife as the Boston records contain the marriage on June 21, 1697, of Thomas Bowes and Sarah Bowes.

3. HENRY³ WATTS (*Ralph*,² *Simon*¹) was baptized at Cockfield June 28, 1602. He was fourteen years old when his father died, and he may then have gone with his oldest brother George to London, where on October 5, 1618, "Henrye Watts sonne of Raff Watts late of Cockfield in the Countie of Yorks (sic) yeoman deceased" was "putt apprentice to Wm. Haylock for VII years from all Saints 1618." Mr. Haylock was a member of the Fishmongers Company, and on December 12, 1625, to that Company "Henrie Watts late apprentice of Wm. Haylock clayminge his freedome by service is admitted and sworne accordingly."* In a subsidy roll of the London Livery Companies, taken in 1641, "In New England" is noted against his name.

It is highly probable that Watts decided to emigrate through the influence of Edward Hilton, a fellow Fishmonger, and that both of them accompanied Mr. Thomas Lewis when he came over to take possession of the patent at Saco which had been granted him February 12, 1629/30, in London. They arrived at Saco by June 28, 1631, when Hilton delivered seisin to Mr. Lewis, Henry Watts being one of the four witnesses. Temporarily he remained with the Saco River planters, a late Saco record (1660) showing that he had land on the west bank of the river, next to John West's, in Mr. Vines's patent, but doubtless he explored the neighboring coast-line in search of a permanent location.†

In 1636 Mr. Watts (he is consistently given the prefix in the records) and Mr. Richard Foxwell decided to settle on the high land at Blue Point sloping down to the marshes and streams which lie to the west of Black Point, and about a mile from the sea, in the present town of Scarborough. Mr. Lewis and Capt. Bonython, believing Blue Point to be within their Saco patent, gave him a deed covering fifty acres of upland and ten acres of

* Apprentice Book of the Company of Fishmongers, London, No. 1.

† His testimony in *Cleeve v. Winter* (1640) shows that he was familiar with the Presumpscot river from 1631, although he called it the Casco.

marsh, on an annual ground rental of nine pence and two days' work, on March 25, 1636.* Both he and Mr. Foxwell built houses and for three years they were the only settlers at Blue Point. Although their nearest neighbors were Capt. Cammock and Mr. Jocelyn across the marshes, the two men kept up a Saco connection, Watts paying a Saco minister's rate of £1 in 1636.

Watts, although he denied that he had given George Cleeve authority to sign his name to the petition which Cleeve prepared for Parliament when he was in England reviving the Plough patent to Lygonia with Col. Rigby in 1643-1644, seems nevertheless to have adhered to Cleeve when he returned to Maine as Deputy-President of that patent. Rev. Thomas Jenner, a Puritan minister at Saco, whose letters to Gov. Winthrop read like intelligence reports from a hostile land, wrote on March 28, 1645, "they (the Gorges government) sent 4 or 5 armed men & fetched before them Mr. Henrie Wats & bound him with his surety to make his appearance here at their Court at Saco, the 25 of the 1 m., the which he did, and produced your worship's letter for his excuse: notwithstanding they either would force him to submit to their government, or pay a fine, who rather than he would pay his fine, submitted for the present but is forthwith departing the province."†

His Blue Point land having been proved to be outside of the eastern boundary of the Saco patent, he took from Cleeve, as agent for Col. Rigby, a deed covering one hundred acres adjoining his house "which he hath built for fifteen years past," in July 1648, at a ground rent of 2s. 6d. a year. On the following September 30, he bought from Cleeve, as agent, a neck of land at Black Point containing five hundred acres, commonly called Cook's Point, at a rental of one farthing an acre to be paid at the feast of St. Michael the Archangel each year.‡ This neck lies at the foot of Scottow's hill and stretches out into Scarborough marshes.

On October 21, 1645, not long after his difficulties with the Gorges government, he had a bad day in court, being fined for swearing several oaths, for swearing again, for breach of the Sabbath, for contempt of authority and for taking goods under execution away from the marshal, the fines amounting to 70 s., of which 30 s. was abated upon his petition to the court. The local church found him indifferent and he was presented for not going to meeting in court after court. With Rev. Robert Jordan, who

* York Deeds, I: 2.

† George Cleeve of Casco Bay, Baxter, 1885, p. 253.

‡ York Deeds, I: 88; XII: 292.

maintained the English form of worship at Spurwink, he had serious differences in 1665. On July 4, 1659, he was in trouble for abuse and contempt toward "the Honoured Governor" (John Endicott) in saying he thanked him for his letter of advice and "I have seen him do this," while making a sign with his hand. So much for free speech in early Maine! On the civil side he had several suits with Mr. Foxwell in 1645, 1659 and 1675, sued William Gibbins and John Lander and was sued by Thomas Sanders in 1640.* In *Foxwell v. Alger*, in 1669, he made a deposition stating his age to be sixty-seven.

While not a consistent office-holder, Watts gave some service to the public beside the usual jury and appraisal duties. When Rev. Robert Jordan took his first step before the Lygonia government to obtain the Trelawney patent for himself, in 1648, Mr. Cleeve, Mr. William Royal, Mr. Foxwell and Mr. Watts, all members of the Assembly, constituted the committee to which the matter was referred, and Watts was one of those who appraised the property at Richmond Island and Spurwink.† He submitted to Massachusetts at Mr. Jordan's house on July 13, 1658, and during the Bay ascendancy he was a Commissioner‡ for Scarborough from 1658 to 1664, when he was chosen but disallowed. He was constable in 1659 and town clerk in 1660. In 1664, when the Province of Maine was taken from Massachusetts and returned to the Gorges regime by the decision of the restored Stuart government, Ferdinando Gorges granted a commission to rule the province as his deputies to his brother-in-law, John Archdale, and twelve "loving friends—Gentlemen all Inhabitants & Residents within the said Province," of whom Henry Watts of "Blew Point" was one, but apparently he, Mr. Francis Neale of Casco Bay and Mr. Purchase of Pejepscot refused the honor.§

The early wife whom Henry Watts most probably had was completely successful in avoiding the records. Some time after 1653 he was married to Cecily Barlow, widow of George Barlow, a quarrelsome and unordained preacher who had fled from Massachusetts disapproval to Maine. The marriage was not happy and by 1665 they separated, Watts charging Rev. Robert Jordan with influencing his wife and keeping her from him, and declaring in court that "such men as Jordan do much mischief, as I conceive," a statement with which later commentators have been willing to agree. Soon afterward his sister, Mrs. Dixon, accom-

* Province and Court Records of Maine, I and II, by index.

† York Deeds, I: 67.

‡ To try cases without a jury wherein small amounts were involved.

§ Province and Court Records of Maine, I: 200-1.

panied by her daughter, son-in-law, grandchildren and possibly county Durham neighbors, came to Scarborough to keep his house and provide him with heirs. With Cecily Barlow he gained her former husband's Dunstan farm of two hundred and thirty acres, which he sold to Robert Nicholson May 20, 1670.*

Having attained the age of seventy in 1672, Watts began to think about settling his affairs. Describing himself as of "Black Point alias Scarborough, in the village we call Cockell" (Cockfield?), he conveyed on April 10, 1673, to Ralph Allison one-half of the Cook's Point plantation and half of the mill which they maintained at equal cost, and, "if the said Watts & the said Allison should part, then the said Watts doth reserve to himself the land that was formerly in tillage, & when Watts shall die the said Allison is to have the whole plantation to himself and his heirs forever." The deed was witnessed by Mrs. Dixon and her grandson, Matthew Allison.† The fate of Scarborough during King Philip's war resulted in Mr. Watt's retirement to Portsmouth, where, calling himself a fishmonger, he deeded his first plantation, that at Blue Point, to Nathan Bedford on June 26, 1680.‡

He survived Ralph Allison, whom he had expected to leave as his heir, and probably his sister Mrs. Dixon and his niece Mrs. Allison as well. His nearest relatives in New England were the two Allison girls, his great-nieces, and to Andrew Brown, the husband of Anne Allison, he deeded the Cook's Point plantation on November 12, 1687, for life support, being then eighty-five years old.§ It was not until 1697 that his nephew Thomas Bowes came over from England to take administration on his estate.

* York Deeds, V: 110.

† York Deeds, II: 148.

‡ York Deeds, III: 74.

§ York Deeds, XII: 292.